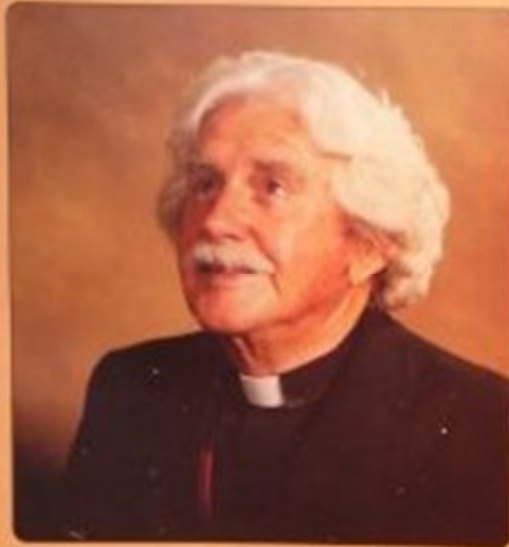


**"I WALKED IN HEAVEN  
WITH JESUS"**



**BY DR. PERCY COLLETT**

# **I WALKED IN HEAVEN WITH JESUS**

**BY**

**Dr. Percy Collett**

*ALL SCRIPTURE QUOTATIONS ARE TAKEN FROM THE  
KING JAMES VERSION OF THE BIBLE*

*ALL SCRIPTURE QUOTATIONS ARE TAKEN FROM  
THE KING JAMES VERSION OF THE BIBLE.*

*I WALKED IN HEAVEN WITH JESUS  
TXU 251 960*

*Author - Dr. Percy Collett  
Co-Author - Connie Lorena*

PREFACE.

This book is a true account of my walk in Heaven with Jesus.

I saw the City Foursquare, the Throne of God, the River of Life, the Brazen Altar, and many Archangels, the Mansions, the Banqueting House, the Seats of Authority, the Eyes of Jesus which light up Heaven, Eternity, the Mother of Jesus, the Apostle Paul, Abraham, Elijah and other prophets.

The journey to Heaven took six hours; five and one half days inside Heaven, and six hours back.. I saw under the Altar the Martyred Saints, looked into the Lamb's Book of Life and saw all the Creation of GOD in the New Heaven, much as Paul was caught up into the Third Heaven.

Dr. Percy Collett.

# TABLE OF CONTENTS

Preface.

## Part I: My Walk In Heaven.

1. The Spectacular Journey To Heaven.....
2. Mansions Of The Great Soul Winners.....
3. Joy In Heaven.....
4. The Temple Of GOD.....
5. The Sea Of Glass, The Crystal Sea.....
6. The River Of Life.....
7. The New Jerusalem.....
8. The Great Throne Of GOD.....
9. The Wedding Garment.....
10. Records In Heaven.....
11. The Banqueting House.....
12. Eternity, And Where Is It?.....
13. The Book Of Life.....
14. The Coming Of The Lord Is At Hand.....
15. Jesus Is My Lord.....

## Part II: My Early Childhood And Growing Up In England.

16. Percy Sees An Angel.....
17. My Mother Went To Heaven.....
18. I Was A Teenager At The Farm.....
19. Landing In New York.....
20. My First Pastor.....
21. Bellingham Meeting.....
22. The Big Top.....

## Part III: My Journeys Among The Indians In South America.

- 23. The Indian And The Amazon.....
- 24. The Sadists of The Interior.....
  
- 25. The Worm Eating Indians.....
- 26. Worship Among The Macambas.....
- 27. The Influence Of Religious Beliefs.....
  
- 28. The Wedding In The Jungles.....

Part IV: In Closing.

- 29. Giving Gives Heavenly Blessing In Return.....

Part V:

Suggested Reading For Daily Christian Walk.

- Introduction To My Grandmother's Prayer Book.....
- 30. My Grandmother's Prayer Book.....
- 31. Testimonies Of Rejoice.....



## **Part I.**

### **My Walk In Heaven**

#### **1. THE SPECTACULAR JOURNEY TO HEAVEN.**

For years I prayed, Oh GOD, let me see Thy Glory, let me come into your Heaven because I know that there is a Heaven and I know that You are there and I know that Your Son Jesus is there and I know that there are Angels in Heaven. I have had a vision of Your Beautiful Heaven.

Little did I realize that it would be so spectacular a journey, little did I realize HOW BIG HEAVEN IS!

It is impossible for the natural human mind walking upon this earth to realize anything real about Heaven. In fact, I did not know that it would be a six hour journey. I kind of believed" in the past that one would go to sleep and then wake up in Heaven. The visions and dreams that I had already had told me a different story. My faith began to grow and my desire became more desperate. I began to get the feeling that I was going into Heaven some way. Days on end I would wonder if it would be that morning or that night or should I be taken up from the crowds of this earth or should it be from my bedroom in my sanctuary of prayer?

When it happened, it happened among the beautiful trees and among the beauty of GOD's Creation on this earth. For GOD made the Earth; He created it in six days, the Planet Earth, that has been here for millions of years.

It happened on this fashion: We were all praying in unison just as they were doing in the Upper Room. I had thought many times about Elijah going and Enoch and the others. And especially, Jesus, my Saviour, how He went to Heaven and they saw Him go and He will return in like manner as He left to come and take His People Home. During some of the dreams that I had about Heaven, It was always going up, up, up beyond the sun and the Moon. And It happened that way.

My Angel appeared to me among the trees. It had rained that day and the flowers were fresh and looming, the grass looked so green and everything looked so pretty; the sky was blue and fair, not a cloud in the sky. As my soul had left my body and my soul looked down at my own body, My Guardian Angel, He, Who had been with me for so many years, said to me:

"We Are Going To Take The Journey. I Have Not Been In Heaven Since You Were Born And At The Time I Appeared To You In Edgehill In The Bedroom, I Have Been Watching You All the Time. Several Times, You Would Have Been Killed By The DEMON POWERS Of Satan Had I Not Been Guarding You." My soul and the Angel stood there in expectation as everyone else was still lying on their backs under the Power of THE LIVING GOD. We were the only ones standing. My soul was so light and gravity had no effect on my soul. I was feeling just like a Spirit, but yet I could think and talk, It was no subconscious mind, It was my soul that soul that is spoken so much about in the Bible. And the Angel was my real Angel which is spoken so much of in the Bible.

Looking into the beautiful blue sky above, here we saw coming The Angel Of The Lord and He settled at my right hand with a flaming sword of fire in his hand.

And a commanding, powerful voice came from his lips: "I Have Come From GOD The Father To Take You To Heaven. We Are Leaving Right Now. "

We began to lift off from the ground just about like a helicopter would lift off and yet, there were no propellers, no Earthly Power to take us up. We were drawn upward by the Power of The Living GOD. Very quickly, we were traveling a million miles a minute, for the journey was over Three Trillion Miles, and yet, It was only a six hour journey. The speed in which we were traveling was millions times faster than the one in which the Astronauts travel to the moon. For we would make this journey of over Three Trillion Miles in Six Hours, faster than any light or darkness, or sunup, or sundown."

It seemed only a moment or two when we were passing by the sun, a spectacular sight to hold; a fire so hot that it could burn you up if you were in the natural. But, the heat of the sun did not hurt us or bother us. The eyes of my soul could look right into the sun, one of GOD's spectacular Creations; the Fire that GOD put there to keep the Earth warm, to make the crops grow. If ever Man could harness the sun, He would have more power than He needed.

But, we were going beyond the sun to GOD The Father, The Greatest Fire And Power of all because GOD is a consuming Fire. We were going to His Throne to see Fire hotter than any other in all the universe. As we passed the sun and this present Solar System, this creation where the Earth whirls around in, Jupiter and Mars, and all the others; this became real to me. I had heard about it; I had thought about it, but, of course I had never experienced it before.

After passing the sun at millions of miles a minute, we came to another sun and another solar system and planets all around it.

And then, another one that was just being created by GOD, where the New Earth will be going around and around. I have been telling of this New Earth and this New Ball of Fire ever since I came back from Heaven.

And at last the scientists have found it; they are seeing it on their tremendous telescopes, substantiating the facts and the truths of my journey. Then, after passing GOD's New Creation and coming out of billions of square miles of beautiful stars, singing and glorifying God, the Ones that GOD had put in place to worship Him, we could now see Heaven in the midst of all these stars, the tremendous planet, HEAVEN, so spectacular and so BIG, eighty times larger than the Earth!

There was Heaven, in the midst of all the stars, surrounded by fire, and lighting, and clouds. The Gates of Heaven were open and now all three of us were inside .

WE HAD TRAVELED OVER THREE TRILLION MILES IN SIX HOURS!

## 2. MANSIONS OF THE GREAT SOUL WINNERS

As we look down from the top of the City Four Square, fifteen hundred miles in height and looking over to the top of the Great Throne with GOD, The Father still five hundred miles above all the Glory, no man will be able to ever fly higher than GOD in Heaven above His Head or even above His Feet.

GOD, The Father, sits there with all The Glory within Him. He is "Our Father, Which Art In Heaven" as Jesus taught us in The Lord's Prayer.

And as the Earthly Catechism reads: "I Believe In GOD, The Father, The Son, And The Holy Ghost." I learned the Catechism as a boy and there is nothing wrong in that as the Catechism is a symbol of Faith and a constant reminder, as does the Cross that all is true and real and that there Eternal Life.

Looking down over the Mansions is a sight so great and spectacular that no human mind can comprehend it. My soul received it in Heaven by the Revelation from Heaven through Jesus, my Lord.

The Mansions are three rows wide and hundreds of miles long and the Base of the Mansions is exactly the same level as the Base of The Throne. The Top of every Mansion is transparent as it is in the City Four Square.

The Mansions are very Big, Bigger than any Mansion ever built on this Earth; more beautiful and The Designer and The Great Architect is Jesus, Who has designed and built them for us, The Redeemed Soul Winners. Each Mansion is individually built with millions of flowers growing out of the gold which will never FADE.

The inside of the Mansions are all studded with precious stones and the walls are Jasper and the floors of the Mansions are pure Gold. The overhanging tapestries are all made and created by GOD. And on the tapestries are the names of those souls that were won by the soul winner to follow Jesus, to be redeemed and to be filled with the Spirit Of The Living GOD.

The conversations inside the Mansions will be in GOD's Language and you can learn that on this Earth by being Baptized in the HOLY GHOST.

For out of your belly can flow rivers of Living Waters and when you speak out of your belly under the Inspiration of The Holy Ghost, that is GOD's Language. When the Redeemed gather up there in the Mansions, there will be singing and joy everlasting. The Mansions are leveled at the Base of The Throne Of GOD and they are built so that the occupants of the Mansions can look upon GOD, The Father. For after the Judgment, all the Redeemed will see Him in His Fullness.

Now, no man can look on the Face of GOD and live.

Inside the Mansions there are, also, flowers growing and the Mansions are with Heavenly furniture which is, also, created by GOD, The Father. There is no need of a kitchen sink or a lavatory to be flushed; there is no need of a kitchen. My, how the Ladies will enjoy this, no dishes to wash or any cooking to do.

There will be neither male nor female in the Mansions. Therefore, all jealousy will cease. There will be no need to hang Grandfather's picture on the wall. There will be no need to remember Death and the Graveyard; all the undertakers will be out of business. There will be no need for the wonderful doctors anymore, no need for hospitals, or clinics, or dentists or nurses. We will be completely Redeemed with a new body that is perfect.

We will be visited by Angels and Jesus will come to visit us in the Mansions.

I saw some of the soul winners' souls in the Mansions already waiting for their bodies to join them and come home. Supper has past and is over and now we will go into the Banqueting House at any time and eat of the Food of Heaven.

The reason that you will be able to see up from the Mansions toward the Throne of GOD only is that the Mansions are built in the Presence of GOD.

Living forever and you will never get tired of it. No mortgage to pay, no repairs to be made and it will be everlasting joy and occupancy forever!

No Mansion will be higher than any other. From one end of the Mansions to the other, we will have the same equality regardless of whatever our skin was in color upon this Earth.

This will be the "Ultimate" of desegregation; there will be no more segregation with special space for the Baptists, or the Methodists, or the Presbyterians, the Catholics, or any other denomination or any other religions of the world who have accepted Jesus as their King. For Jesus is the Lord of this Earth now to His Saints; He will be the King of Heaven for the Redeemed of millions.

Walking down through the front rows of the Mansions with Jesus, a lot of the Mansions were already occupied. The Apostle Paul had one, Smith Wigglesworth had another Aimee McPherson had one and there were many others.

How would you like to be sitting in the front room of your Mansion gazing upon the scenery before you, The Throne of GOD, The Mountains, The Rivers and The Valleys among a billion shades of colors and The Million Miles of Eternity?

When I was a little boy in my home, I could look out of my bedroom window and see the rolling hills and everybody would say: "You have a beautiful view here out of the window of your bedroom."

I have walked outside of some of the mansions on Earth of the present day and have visited the inside of the houses of Princes, Kings and Millionaires; not one of them can even begin to touch the Beauties of Heaven !

### 3.

## JOY IN HEAVEN

There are thousands of Bells hanging around the Throne of GOD. I often wondered what was the meaning of the song: Prayer Bells In Heaven, How Sweetly They Ring. Jesus and The Archangels explained to me what the Bells are for.

GOD, The Father and Jesus, His Son order the Bells to ring at the Announcement of souls being saved on the Earth, and how beautiful they do ring. And they are loud bells. After the Bells ring, The Harps play, The Cymbals jingle and The Trumpets blow, it is joy all because the Devil has lost some souls.

"And He Spake This Parable Unto Them, Saying, What Man Of You, Having An Hundred Sheep, If He Lose One Of Them, Doth Not Leave The Ninety And Nine In The Wilderness, And Go After That Which Is Lost, Until He Find It? And When He Hath Found It, He Layeth It On His Shoulders, Rejoicing, And When He Cometh Home, He Calleth Together His Friends And Neighbours, Saying Unto Them, Rejoice With Me; For I Have Found My Sheep Which Was Lost."

LUKE 15:3, 4, 5, 6 and 7.

Under the Altar of GOD there are thousands praying to the Glory of GOD: "How Long, Oh Lord, How Long, Oh Lord, Will It Be Before We Are Avenged Of Our Enemies." Your loved ones have gone on before you, those who are washed in the Blood and filled with the Spirit; they pray daily for you in Heaven and their prayers go up before GOD, The Father as Incense in His Presence.

A daily bulletin comes into Heaven announcing the number of souls saved upon the Earth that day.

"Let Him Know, That He Which Converteth The Sinner From The Error Of His Way Shall Save A Soul From Death, And Shall Hide A Multitude Of Sins."

James 5:20.

"That The Trial Of Your Faith, Being Much More Precious Than Of Gold That Perisheth, Though It Be Tried With Fire, Might Be Found Unto Praise And Honour And Glory At The Appearing Of Jesus Christ:

Whom Having Not Seen, Ye Love; In Whom, Though Now Ye See Him Not, Yet Believing, Ye Rejoice With Joy Unspeakable And Full Of Glory:

Receiving The End Of Your FAITH, Even The Salvation Of Your Souls."

1 Peter 1:7, 8 and 9.

The saving of souls, that is what it is all about on this Earth, for He that wins souls is wise.

"The Wise Shall Inherit Glory: But Shame Shall Be The Promotion Of Fools."

Proverbs 3:35.

## 4.

### THE TEMPLE OF GOD

It is impossible for the human brain to understand the Temple. The Temple is created for souls to go in and after the Rapture with their bodies transformed into Heavenly Beings, they will worship GOD in the Beauty of Holiness.

For in the Temple, the Song of the Redeemed will be in GOD's Language: "Holy, Holy, Holy, Lord GOD Almighty." Millions of souls, millions of transformed bodies will worship under the anointing of the Spirit of the Living GOD. I was in the Temple in Heaven and I sat by the soul of my Grandfather with many other present that I had known upon this Earth. I took my place before my Grandfather as I did upon this Earth.

And you will be able to stay in the Temple a Thousand Years if you want to do that. And it will seem just like one Earthly Day for One Day is as a Thousand Years with the Lord.

"And Thou Shalt Set In It Settings Of Stones, Even Four Rows Of Stones: The First Row Shall Be A Sardius, A Topaz, And A Carbuncle: This Shall Be The First Row. And The Second Row Shall Be An Emerald, A Sapphire, And A Diamond. And The Third Row A Ligure, An Agate, And An Amethyst. And The Fourth Row A Beryl, And An Onyx, And A Jasper: They Shall Be Set In Gold In Their Inclosings." Exodus 28:17 and 20.

"And He Carried Me Away In The Spirit To A Great And High Mountain, And Shewed Me That Great City, The Holy Jerusalem, Descending Out Of Heaven From GOD, Having The Glory Of GOD: And Her Light Was Like Unto A Stone Most Precious, Even Like A Jasper Stone, Clear As Crystal." Revelation 21:10 and 11.

"And The Building Of The Wall Of It Was Of Jasper: And The City Was Pure Gold, Like Unto Clear Glass. And The Foundations Of The Wall Of The City Were Garnished With All Manner Of Precious Stones. The First Foundation Was Jasper; The Second, Sapphire; The Third, A Chalcedony; The Fourth, An Emerald; The Fifth, Sardonyx; The Sixth, Sardius; The Seventh, Chrysolite; The Eighth, Beryl; The Ninth, A Topaz; The Tenth, A Chrysoprasus; The Eleventh, A Jacinth; The Twelfth, An Amethyst."

Revelation 21:18, 19 and 20.

The Temple is so beautiful and the Walls of The Temple are all studded with Precious Stones. The Temple does have seats because this is where the Raptured Bodies of the souls will worship GOD.

The Altar of the Temple is The Golden Altar before the Throne of GOD. Every seat in the Temple has a beautiful view of The Throne where Jesus sits on the Right Hand of His Father.

The Doors of the Temple, Twelve of them, are so splendid! There is one set of doors every ten miles, showing that it is One Hundred Twenty Miles of Entrances to the Temple. You enter on a higher elevation than the Seats; You walk down the center aisle to other aisles between the seats, all of Pure Gold, with Gold Carpets. The Seats, too, are all Fourteen Carat Gold.. The Seats are cushioned with beautiful Gold Cushions.

The Interior of the Temple has many colors with a Blue Ceiling. You can perhaps begin to estimate in your Earthly Brain the size; One Hundred Twenty Miles Wide of just the Entrances extending out Two Hundred Miles each side of the Entrances, making it Five Hundred Twenty Miles Wide of Seating capacity; From the Back Seats to the Front Seats, it is One Thousand Miles. This is to hold all the Raptured Bodies which have come up from the Earth, A Number that no man can number.

The Top of the Temple, being blue looks like a Sky and The Lighting in the Temple is Glorious because all GOD has to do is say: "Let There Be Light in The Temple!" And There Is Light.

The Orchestra of Ten Thousand Musical Instruments, and more, also faces the Throne of GOD and the service is led by GOD. The Archangels stand around Walls of the Temple with Flaming Swords in Their Hands and The Worship of The Lord is continuous. You do not have to wait until seven o'clock at night to go to church; the Worship of GOD is Forever and Ever and you can enjoy the service Forever because there is no Time.

In the front of the Temple there are Twelve Gold Pillars with Seven Gold Beams on Top; the Seven Beams represent the seven Spirits of the Living GOD and the Twelve Pillars represent the Authority of GOD. The Cherubims and The Seraphims attend the service and so do the Elders.

"And When The Day Of Pentecost Was Fully Come, They Were All With One Accord In One Place. And Suddenly There Came A Sound From Heaven As Of A Rushing Mighty Wind, And It Filled All The House Where They Were Sitting. And There Appeared Unto Them Cloven Tongues Like As Of Fire, And It Sat Upon Each Of Them. And They Were All Filled With The Holy Ghost, And Began To Speak With Other Tongues, As The Spirit Gave Them Utterance."

Acts 2:1, 2, 3 and 4.

And the congregation sings in GOD's Language, A Language you can learn down here on this Earth by being filled with The Holy Ghost and Fire, to know how to worship GOD in His Language.

"HOLY, HOLY, HOLY, LORD GOD ALMIGHTY, WHICH WAS, AND IS, AND IS TO COME. YOU ARE WORTHY, O LORD, TO RECEIVE GLORY AND HONOR AND POWER: FOR YOU HAVE CREATED ALL THINGS, AND FOR YOUR PLEASURE THEY ARE AND WERE CREATED."

## 5.

### **THE SEA OF GLASS, THE CRYSTAL SEA**

The Crystal Sea is filled with The Spirit of The Living GOD, also. Unlike The River of Life, it is more stationary. As Peter walked on the water, looking onto Jesus; in his lack of Faith, He began to sink and called out unto our Lord. And through the Name of Jesus He was able to walk on the water.

Heaven is a Revelation of the Beautiful Scriptures in the Bible. Each one of The Scriptures in the Bible, which were written and inspired by the Holy Ghost, becomes alive in Heaven, for GOD's Word Is Forever Settled In Heaven. How real and how Beautifully is Heaven constructed.

The Crystal Sea and The Sea of Glass where we will dance with Angels and walk on the Sea by the millions, will be a Revelation of what Jesus was trying to show Peter on the water.

It will be a wonderful sight, a sight to behold, with the millions on the Crystal Sea and Jesus in our midst, King of Kings and Lord of Lords.

The Celebrations, The Gatherings of The Saints and The Worship of GOD will be continuous. Heaven is full of activity and not one moment will be wasted or one idle word will be heard, or take place. Heaven will be a continuous, Spectacular Worship of GOD in all Parts of Heaven.

The Crystal Sea, The Sea of Glass, The Temple, The River of Life, The Brazen Altar, The Golden Altar, The Great Throne in Heaven will all operate in harmony by and through the Spirit of The Living God. There will be no ships, no boats needed on the Crystal Sea in Heaven. All of us will be able to walk on the Sea of Glass.

The Crystal Sea will be full of fish, Beautiful fish, with many colors. This answers the question of will there be any Fish in Heaven.

Yes, there will be Fish. But, we will not eat them, because all Killing and all Destruction and all Death will be Destroyed. There will be no eating of Earthly things represented in Heaven; we will eat of the Fruit In The Banqueting House.

Jesus walked the Shores of Galilee and walked on the Jericho Road. The Seas and the Lakes where Jesus went sailing in the boats in the Bible Days seem to have an attraction for Jesus. In the early Bible Days, men crossed these Rivers and Streams and Boats were used for Commerce. Men crossed the Mediterranean in those days and sailed to India, Africa and Europe.

In Heaven, The Crystal Sea and The Sea of Glass cover more square miles than any waters upon this Earth. There will be no more Sea upon this Earth, for the Old Heaven and the Old Earth will pass away and it is the New Heaven that I walked in and traveled to by The Spirit all over GOD's Heaven. It is very hard for the mind of man to conceive and to understand the Greatness of Heaven. Many of the Religionists upon this Earth can only think in the Natural and not in the Spiritual as their minds are actually stagnated in the Ideology of Man.



The Book of Revelation to many of these men are beyond their Spiritual thinking but, when you are Baptized in the Real Power of the Holy Ghost and with Fire, you are Baptized into a Spiritual World out of the Natural World. To understand, Yea, the Great Things of GOD, it is a Glorious Reality to the man who walks in the Spirit. Bible men walked in the Spirit. John on Patmos was in the Spirit on the Lord's Day and you try to tell me how a hardened Religionist can understand.

This is Impossible. Therefore, it is our place to love them and pray for them, that they, too, may walk in the Spirit. For joking and jesting are sin to the Spirit-Filled Man. And even contradictory feelings of Earthly and natural walking men can only oppose the Deep Things of GOD. Their minds have become warped and their souls have become Dead to The Great And Glorious Revelation of the Scriptures made manifest and revealed to the Spiritual-minded Man.

As John was in the Spirit on the Lord's Day, GOD revealed to him the truths of Heaven. This, what the Lord has shown to me, is not a new Doctrine or Revelation; It is a fuller Revelation of the Spirit, not adding any words to the Bible, or any New Thing, or New Organization, or A New Word, but A Revelation of the True Word of GOD.

The Sea of Glass and The Crystal Sea, which are side by side, cover Thousands of Miles in Heaven. The Sea of Glass part, Fifteen Hundred Miles square, is the Dance Floor of Heaven setting in the middle of the Crystal Sea. You get to the Dance Floor of Heaven by the way of the Spirit and not by the way of a Boat as Jesus used on this Earth. There is no need of Boats in Heaven.

You can fly across the crystal Sea like a bird does fly on this Earth, only in a more Glorious Way. Can you imagine millions of souls crossing over the Great Sea in Heaven to land on the Sea of Glass? What a Spectacular Sight this is!

When GOD's Glory from the Throne shines upon the Crystal Sea, the Array of Colors far supersedes the Sunrise or the Sunset of this Earth shining on the Seas and the Rivers of this Earth. The Rivers and the Seas of this Earth reflect the Glories of the Sun and they are really beautiful for this is a part of GOD's Earthly Creation. When you see His Heavenly Creation and the Glory of GOD shining on the Waters in Heaven, Oh, how Beautiful Heaven is!

As birds fly over the waters of this Earth, we, the Souls of Men, will fly over the Seas of Heaven. And all of it is held in place by GOD's Hand. As we watch the Birds fly over the waters of this Earth, God will watch us and His Son, Jesus, fly over the Living Waters of Heaven.

Our Bodies, both in the Resurrection and the Rapture, are transformed into the Heavenly in a Twink, which is much quicker than a wink. We meet with Jesus in the Air and Satan is conquered in the Air for Satan is The Prince and The Power of the Air which causes the Storms on the Earth and in the Air.

To illustrate the Power of Jesus from His Father, He said to the Waters of this Earth: "Peace, Be Still." Mark 4:39.

In a greater and a more powerful action of Jesus and a greater demonstration of the Power of GOD, Jesus will take control of the Air and rebuke Satan. Satan will lose that Power that comes from being

## 5.

### I WALKED IN HEAVEN WITH JESUS

The Prince and The Power of the Air and Jesus will have the Air completely under His Control and He will have a Joyous, happy gathering with no Demon interference whatsoever, as do many of the religious gatherings upon this Earth where Satan tries to get control and cause confusion, chaos in the Spirit in many of those meetings even to the extent that some of the Leaders are greatly affected by this Power.

Therefore, there is a great difference between the Heavenly Walk and the Earth Walk. Walking in Heaven is forever; walking on this Earth ends in Death of the Body.

When the Bride flies into Heaven with Jesus through the Inner Gate and She stands before the Throne of GOD to see this Spectacular Sight of the Glory of GOD, that will be a Great Emigration of the Bodies of Souls of Men and the Bodies of Men Transformed ready to worship GOD at the Throne. The first action in Heaven at this Glorious time will be the Singing the Song of the Redeemed in which The Angels will not be able to partake. The The Angels will have to hold Their Voices at that Great Gathering with Jesus, our King. King Jesus will then be ready to present us before The Father and tell Him: "These Are The Ones, Mine, That I Bought With My Blood On Calvary. These Are The Ones That Served You On The Earth, My Father; These Are The Ones That I Brought Into Your Heaven. These Are The Ones That Will Worship You Forever And Ever, The Redeemed Of The Fallen Planet, Earth, Which Is Passing Away Down There."

And then will come the Welcome from GOD. What a great sight that will be, a Countless Number before the Throne of GOD and with Jesus, Our King.

The Judgment before the Great White Throne will begin and it will be very fast. Souls of Men will be brought out of the Outer Perimeter before the Throne of GOD to receive their Reward. Some to the left and some to the Right. On the Left Hand of GOD is the Bottomless Pit. After the Judgment and the Shedding of Tears in the place of the Shedding of Blood, there will be no more Tears Shed by the Redeemed; the Redeemed had made their CHOICE.

After this great sight the Redeemed will get into their Chariots and fly over the Crystal Sea, they will fly all over GOD's Heaven as Free Heavenly Citizens, not to be shackled, or Judged anymore, never to see Death Again, Living forever in Eternity.

Those, who come from the Outer Perimeter after receiving the Heavenly Schooling of Learning HOW TO WORSHIP GOD, will fly in the Chariots with us.

However, these will not have a Mansion because they had theirs down on the Earth, There is no Sunset in Heaven or any Sunrise; Jesus Is The Light Of Heaven.

## 6.

### **THE RIVER OF LIFE.**

The Brazen Altar and the Golden Alter are a Spectacular Sight to see and it is the River of Life which flows from under the Altars, the Golden and the Brazen.

It is from the River of Life that Life is given to both the Body and the Soul. The River of Life flows out from the Throne. And it is Within the Throne that the Spirit of GOD comes from and Everlasting Life to the Body at the Rapture and the Transfiguration.

The River of Life flowing out from GOD and the Throne is Two Thousand Miles Long and Very Wide. This Great River is the Power and the Spirit flowing down upon this Earth and into the Human Bodies, to bring life to the Body in the Resurrection so that we will have life and will have it more ABUNDANTLY .

The tremendous Flood Gates which will be opened up at the Time of the Rapture will let the River of Life flow down onto the Earth, around the Graves upon this Earth and immediately, at the Resurrection of the Dead, the Dead Bodies will drink in of the River of Life and become alive through the Spirit of God.

And in the Twinkling of an Eye, these Bodies will rise and go sailing through the Air to meet Jesus.

The Golden Altar and the Brazen Altar with Thousands and Thousands of Angels on each side of the River sing to the Glory of GOD. You have heard the old song: "Down By The River Side, I Will Put On My White Robe, Down By The River Side." That song, sung by the Black People, is not so far off after all. Some of those Spirituals must have been inspired by the Spirit Of The LIVING GOD.

You speak of the great Baptizing in the Rivers on this Earth; To be Baptized

In water here is a wonderful reality and a Confession of Faith. In Heaven there will be a Great Baptizing. Every Redeemed Soul and Every Transfigured Body will be Baptized in the River of Life in Heaven as a Confession of Redemption. This is one of the Great Secrets revealed to me in Heaven, one of the One Hundred Secrets that I am to reveal on this Earth. I want to be very Accurate and Specific in what I write in this Book because this Book is a Revelation of Jesus to me while in Heaven.

The River of Life, being Two Thousand Earthly Miles Long and Angels and Redeemed Souls and Bodies standing on each side of the River, will make a Spectacular Sight!

And it will be at this Singing that the Flood Gates will close and there will be no more Spirit of the Living GOD upon this Earth. The Earth will be an awful place to be on at that Time, for down below they will be crying for the Rocks

And the Mountains to fall on them and it will be Gross Darkness. There will be no more Spirit of the Lord shining on this Earth. When the Flood Gates close, it will be all over then.

The River of Life will fill again to its Top for the Great Baptizing in Heaven. And it will not just be a sprinkling as it will be Immersing. The Saints of GOD which will already have been Blood Washed, will be washed with the Spirit in Heaven, full of Fire from off the Brazen Altar and anointed forever and ever by GOD, The Father, to live with Him where there will be no more Tears, Sorrow, Sacrifice or Death.

The trees on each side of the River bearing their Twelve Manners of Fruits will be eaten by the Redeemed Souls. While it was Adam and Eve who ate of the Fruits of the Trees in the Garden, which brought Death to them, the Trees of Life on each side of the River will become a symbol of Life forever and ever.

## 7.

### **THE NEW JERUSALEM**

"And They Shall Come From The East, And From The West, And From The North, And From The South, And Shall Sit Down In The Kingdom Of GOD." Luke 13:29.

The New Jerusalem are the Occupants of the City Four Square. The City Four Square is a beautiful building standing alongside of the Temple, reaching Fifteen Hundred Miles into the Air. The Temple is a Thousand Miles High, the City Four Square going up another Five Hundred Miles above the Temple.

The gorgeous and beautiful look of the City Four Square and the Temple side by side, that is a Spectacular Sight. Bells ring Gloriously above the Temple to Glorify the Living GOD. And everything is in Tune in order to have the Unity of the Spirit. For all of it operates in the Spirit of the Living GOD.

The City Four Square is transparent. Since it is Fifteen Hundred Miles across each way, one would think in our Earthly Minds that it would cause a problem to those occupying the Center of the City Four Square. It certainly does not cause any problem.

"For We Know In Part, And We Prophesy In Part. But When That Which Is Perfect Is Come, Then That Which Is In Part Shall Be Done Away. For Now We See Through A Glass, Darkly; But Then Face To Face: Now I Know In Part; But Then Shall I Know Even As Also I Am Known." 1 Corinthians 13:9, 10 and 12.

I walked through one of the corridors of the City Four Square and I could see the Throne perfectly from every part of the Interior. All the corridors of the City Four Square are full of Angels and how wonderful it is to live among Angels. And Angels do appear to Men and Women upon this Earth; Angels have been a part of my life ever since I was a little boy of about five years old when my Angel appeared to me at the foot of my bed in that large manor house where I was brought up and He spoke to me there.

"But To Which Of The Angels Said He At Any Time, Sit On My Right Hand, Until I Make Thine Enemies Thy Footstool: Are They Not All Ministering Spirits, Sent Forth To Minister For Them Who Shall Be Heirs Of Salvation?" Hebrews 1:13 and 14.

Angels appeared to me and a congregation in a Missionary meeting years ago; I was directed by the Lord of Heaven, for Jesus is our Lord. Here are the instructions that I received from Jesus:

"Do Not Remember Times, Dates, Seasons, Earthly Banquets To Attend. Look Not On The Calendar To Find Out When The New Moon Is, Or What Is The Sunrise, Or The Sunset, Nor To Attend Feasts On The Earth, Or To Celebrate Earthly Dates For Banquets, Traditional Dates Of Men To Celebrate The Glory of Man, Nor To Listen To Kings, Or Queens, Or Princes Of This Earth, Or To Celebrate Earthly Dates Whatsoever."

However, I was told to obey the Laws of the Land as long as it did not conflict with my Five And One Half Days In Heaven and that I must keep my mind on Heaven, to stay in the Spirit and preach The Word, to tell the wonderful Testimony of Heaven and all the things that were told to me.

To tell it to the Nations of the World, to declare this Message and to publish it in all the Nations of the World.

To preach the Gospel of Love and Glad Tidings and to Publish it in all Nations. And then the end will come.

"Fear Not, Little Flock; For It Is Your Father's Good Pleasure To Give You The Kingdom. Sell That Ye Have, And Give Alms; Provide Yourselves Bags Which Wax Not Old, A Treasure In The Heavens That Faileth Not, Where No Thief Approacheth, Neither Moth Corrupteth." Luke 12:32 and 33.

"And It Came To Pass Afterward, That He Went Throughout Every City And Village, Preaching And Shewing The Glad Tidings Of The Kingdom Of GOD: And The Twelve Were With Him." Luke 8:1.

There is no Time in Eternity. Eternity is forever and ever and there is no ending. I was told by Jesus to tell all the souls I can the Truth of the Gospel and of the Lord Jesus Christ, Our Saviour and Coming King.

"The Fruit Of The Righteous Is A Tree Of Life; And He That Winneth Souls Is Wise." Proverbs 11:30.

## 8.

### **THE GREAT THRONE OF GOD**

The GREAT THRONE OF GOD has a base over Two Thousand Miles Wide and Two Thousand Miles High which gives The Throne and The Altar Two Thousand Square Miles in all.

From the Throne comes the Voice of GOD, the Everlasting Authority of all things to come. From the Throne come instructions to all of Heaven, the Light of Heaven comes from the Throne through Jesus Christ, The Son of GOD, Who sits on the Right Hand of The Father for GOD has given The Authority of Light to His Son, Jesus.

God said: "Let There Be Light" and there was light; He gave us the sun by day and the moon by night and the shining stars in their place and order. Heaven and the Throne are on this fashion: No sun or moon or stars are needed inside of Heaven. The difference between Heaven and Earth is: Jesus takes the place of the sun and the moon and stars and He Lights Up Heaven with an Everlasting Light; and we, as the Souls of Men and Women, take the place of the stars and become the Stars of Heaven.

Even the old song that we used to sing: "Will There Be Any Stars In My Crown?" Has more truth than many people would think. For we will be the Stars and each one of us will shine with the Glory of God on our Faces.

Our Faces will light up and illuminate reflecting to all Heaven, the Glory and the Light of GOD which is shining on us and so causes us to shine in our own Heavenly Way, Truly, the Throne of GOD is Big and Beautiful.

Try to understand in your Earthly Mind Two Thousand Square Miles of Glory, Two Thousand Square Miles of Righteousness, Two thousand Square Miles of Love, Two Thousand Square Miles of the Spirit of GOD, all shining out as one Great, Big Power House, controlling all of Heaven, all the Universe, all the millions of Planets and controlling all unto Everlasting and Everlasting.

Think of it, the Throne of GOD, Its Base, Its Altars, the Golden Altar and the Cherubims and the Seraphims, the Elders, the Brazen Altar and the River of Life flowing out!

The Throne of GOD is truly a Great Power House, Magnificent and with all the Glories and Glories forever and ever. The Rainbows circling around the Throne are circling forever with the Billions of shades of colors, all to make the Throne look more beautiful. The Voice of GOD coming out of all of this Glorious Beauty can be heard all over the Universe and can be heard Billions of miles away. If only the individual that wants to hear, will seek GOD and Believe, they can hear It, Too. The Men of GOD of the Old Testament heard Him for GOD spoke to them out of Heaven and they heard Him and answered Him back and talked to Him.

The different levels of the Throne are for a purpose. First, the Space under the Throne, where Martyrs pray to the GOD above them, and GOD hears their VOICES, crying out to GOD to destroy the works of Death and bring Life.

The Death Angels who used to live in Heaven, they were Angels of Life and they became Angels of Death. These Death Angels were cast out of Heaven with Lucifer, Satan, The Destroyer of the Soul and the Bringer of Death.

Satan set up a Death Establishment upon the Earth to bring Death and Destruction to the Human Race, to bring Sickness and Suffering, Chaos and Confusion, and any other reality, as the works of Satan are real. Lucifer was cast from all the Glory of GOD because He wanted to be like the Most High GOD. And we have had others upon this Earth with the Spirit of Lucifer, Dictators and Leaders who think that they are GODs. You can go back through the ages and find hundreds of them who challenged GOD just like Lucifer. There are still Satanic Leaders upon this Earth to this very day who challenge GOD and His Glory. And they all will go by the way of Death and Destruction into Everlasting Shame, just like Lucifer, Himself.

When I entered into the Gate, the First Reality that the three of us saw was THE GREAT WHITE THRONE OF GOD, which is not white as one would paint a wall with a flat or shiny white as only the Human Mind can understand.

THE GREAT WHITE THRONE means the Fire of GOD, for GOD is a Consuming Fire and THE GREAT WHITE THRONE is so hot with so much Fire, that it is WHITE hot. And when an Earthly Furnace is brought to an Intensive Heat, It causes the Fire in the Furnace to become WHITE hot. The Whiteness of GOD's Throne has nothing to do with Color, White or Black; It is a White Fire. There are those that would have us think that the Throne is just for the white man because it is called White. GOD's Love is for every Kindred and Nation and Color.

When you see the Beautiful Colors protruding out from the Fire, they represent every color of the Beauty of GOD's Creation. Everything in Heaven that moves looks into the Throne of GOD. The Most High, The Almighty GOD, sits on Top of the Throne Two Thousand Miles above the Base; there sit GOD, The Father and His Son.

It would be impossible for man to get this any other way than to have a Vision of Heaven or a walk in Heaven. John saw the Throne of GOD on Patmos. My walk in Heaven with Jesus is just an extension of what the Prophets saw, of what John saw on Patmos. My walk in Heaven is a Revelation of Jesus Christ and Him only, HE, Whom I serve in the Spirit.

No matter whether you fly around the Throne in a Chariot or walk around the Throne Thousands of Miles or whether you travel by the Spirit, it is impossible for you to take your eyes off the Throne. The Throne is the Center of all Activity in Heaven covering Millions of Square Miles of Glory.

The Throne of GOD is based on GOD's Foundation, unmoveable forever and ever in the New Heaven. From out of the Throne and GOD comes Eternal Life, Everlasting Life of the Soul. The whole Two Thousand Square Miles of Glory engulfs all Activity of Eternity with no Beginning or Ending.

The Left Hand of GOD and the Right Hand of GOD; they extend out from the Throne.

GOD's feet extends out from the Throne; He can use the Earth for a Footstool, -TOSS the Stars around at Will.

He can say to this Planet: "Move"! and it moves. This Planet shall burn up and it will burn up, He can cause The Earth to Shake and Satan to Tremble. He controls the Thunder and the

Lightning which is like electric into all outer space. The only Authority Left with Satan or Lucifer was to be the Prince of the Power of this Air of the Earth.

Destruction and Death, Sickness and Affliction, Chaos and Trouble; all of this is in the hands of Satan.

But, thank GOD, Satan's Sickness, His Power and His Destruction are all coming to an end. And all Cancers, Sickness and Diseases, all are to be cast into the Bottomless Pit, never to be remembered anymore. The Throne of GOD has Power and Glory and Authority coming from it and all around it.

The Elders that sit on the Base of the Throne are not Humans; they are Angelic Beings and they sit in their places of Authority forever and ever and ever.

The Throne of GOD is The Big Wheel In The Middle Of All Wheels. While the Throne of GOD is Solid and Stationary, yet it turns around on its Own Axis in the Center and the Middle of Heaven. The Whole Planet of Heaven is Perfectly Round. Every Living Reality moves in Heaven except GOD, The Father and He is Unmoveable. He sits on His Throne Forever and Ever and Ever.

Yet, GOD can be everywhere at One Time. Jesus is the Wheel in the Middle of the Wheel on this Earth to His Saints and to His Followers. God is the Middle of the Wheel in Heaven and Jesus, His Son sits at High Right Hand.

GOD is a Spirit and His Spirit extends out into the Everlasting, which has No End or No Beginning. Jesus, GOD's Son, can reveal Himself in His Heavenly Body to any Part of this Earth or to any Part of the Universe like His Father. Jesus is a Revelation of GOD. THE Holy Ghost is a Revelation of Jesus. This gives you the Revelation of the Triune Godhead.

While the Center of the Throne of GOD is Fire Hot White, The rest of the Throne is full of the most beautiful of Shades of Colors, into the Millions.

The Slain Lamb is a reminder to the Heavenly Citizens that it was Jesus who Died on the Cross and Shed His Blood for All. The Slain Lamb, A Creation of GOD, Revealing to Heaven that He gave His Only Begotten Son to Die for the Souls of Men.

Yet, The Slain Lamb has become Alive, to praise the Living GOD forever and ever. Jesus was that Slain Lamb of Calvary; for it was John that said: "Behold, The Lamb Of GOD, That Taketh Away The Sins Of The World."

## 9.

### **THE WEDDING GARMENT**

There is a very large place in Heaven, A beautiful building designed for the sole purpose of making the Wedding Garments. Thousands of Angels are working with Fine Needles and Beautiful Cloth; The Garment made especially to fit each one of the Redeemed, whether it is a Little Child or A Full-Grown Person.

The Wedding Garment will be ready for those who have been washed in His Blood.



It was a Miraculous Sight to walk between rows and rows of Angels working and the Colors so Beautiful and the Cloths so Gorgeous!

Millions of Yards of Cloth were hanging from the Ceiling above created by GOD for the Angels to use to make these Wedding Garments and the Needle work is so Fine, you can hardly see the Stitches.

"The Kingdom Of Heaven I Like Unto A Certain King, Which Made A Marriage For His Son." The King said to his servants, "Go Ye Therefore Into The Highways, And As Many As Ye Shall Find, Bid To The Marriage." "And When The King Came In To See The Guests, He Saw There A Man Which Had Not On A Wedding Garment: And He Saith Unto Him, Friend, How Camest Thou In Hither Not Having A Wedding Garment? And He Was Speechless. Then Said The King To The Servants, Bind Him Hand And Foot, And Take Him Away, And Cast Him Into Outer Darkness; There Shall Be Weeping And Gnashing Of Teeth. For Many Are Called, But Few Are Chosen." Matthew 22:2, 9, 11, 12, 13 and 14.

"Let Us Be Glad And Rejoice, And Give Honor To Him: For The Marriage Of The Lamb Is Come, And His Wife Hath Made Herself Ready."

"And To Her Was Granted That She Should Be Arrayed In Fine Linen, Clean And White: For The Fine Linen Is The Righteousness Of Saints."

"And He Saith Unto Me, Write, Blessed Are They Which Are Called Unto The Marriage Supper Of The Lamb. And He Saith Unto Me, These Are The True Sayings Of GOD." Revelation 19:7, 8 and 9.

## 10.

### RECORDS IN HEAVEN

GOD has a Recording Department and It is Big. Every Idle Word is Recorded, even as every beautiful word Man speaks.

"But I Say Unto You, That Every Idle Word That Men Shall Speak, They Shall Give Account Thereof In The Day Of Judgment."

"For By Thy Words Thou Shalt Be Justified, And By Thy Words Thou Shalt Be Condemned." Matthew 12:36 and 37.

These records are kept until the Judgment. And after the Judgment, GOD will push them out into the Sea of Forgetfulness, never to be remembered Anymore.

"But Why Dost Thou Judge Thy Brother? Or Why Dost Thou Set At Nought Thy Brother? For We Shall All Stand Before The Judgment Seat Of Christ."

"For It Is Written, As I Live, Saith The Lord, Every Knee Shall Bow To Me, And Every Tongue Shall Confess To GOD."

"So Then Every One Of Us Shall Give Account Of Himself To GOD." Romans 14:10, 11 and 12.

"For Our Conversation Is In Heaven; From Whence Also We Look For The Saviour, The Lord Jesus Christ:" Philippians 3:20.

## 11.

### THE BANQUETING HOUSE

He Brought Me Into The Banqueting House And His Banner Over Me Was Love.

The Large Banqueting House of Heaven is a Real Banqueting House, not just in word only. This is a Building underneath the Mansions with stairways going down from every Mansion. It is lit up from end to end by GOD's Glory.

My Prayer for almost seven years was: "Oh, GOD, Let Me See Thy Glory." And GOD let me see His Glory, The Glory of GOD in GOD's Fullness.

The Banqueting House, Miles Wide And Many Miles Long, is Transparent and One Sits opposite One another except opposite with Jesus, Who will then wear His Crown because He then will be Our King. The Transparency of Heaven enables the Citizen of Heaven to look upon the Throne always. The Banqueting House has Hundreds of Tables in it, all built out of Beautiful Gold. All the Tables are Decorated with an Abundance of all kinds of Fruits and You cannot Eat them all up and Diminish the Supply; There is always an Abundance.

The Walls are Jasper and The Ceiling Blue. The Floors are Gold and the Seats are Purple. The Tables are inlaid with Precious Stones of all Kinds. Nothing has to be Cleaned in Heaven because there is no Dust or Falling Leaves, no Thunder Storms, no Rain, no Winds Blowing. Only the Celestial Breath of GOD that Supplies Heaven with His Celestial Air.

The Sweet Fragrance of the Flowers that never Decay fill the Banqueting House with such a Wonderful Air that it Satisfies the Sense of Smell in your Soul. When the Body leaves this Earth at the Great Resurrection of the Redeemed and when the Body and the Soul are joined together again and they will make the Great Entrance into Heaven before the Throne, then the Body will realize as well as the Soul Everlasting Life Forever And Ever.

It will be so wonderful in that Banqueting House, Millions sitting together and seeing one another as we are known because we shall be known as we are known.

It will be a Great Hallelujah of Remembrance as we see one another. Sin and Affliction and Sickness will be forgotten and no more Tears will be Shed as that will only last for a little while in Heaven and it will be all over, for the Troubles and the Heartaches of this Earth will be forgotten.

Discrepancies and Misunderstandings will be no more. Letters of Opposition will not be Written. There will be no one Claiming to be Holier than Thou nor Claim to be Smarter or more Clever than the Other. There will be no more Church Officials to set us Straight or

Organizations that will say that They are the only Ones who are Right. There will be no more Thoughts of Hate, Misunderstandings or Jealousies, Divorces or Law Suits, Court Houses or Penitentiaries, no more Politicians to be Elected, no more Democrats or or Republicans, Communists or Socialists, Scientists or Psychiatrists, Medical Doctors or Dentists: none of those will be needed anymore, for there will be no more Sickness or Pain.

We are now all gathered together in the Banqueting House of Love. Love is the Keynote of Heaven. He, who Loves His Brother, Does Him No Harm and Sister, Who Loves Her Sister, Does Her No Harm. Love is the Keynote of Heaven. Overhanging all the Tables is the Banner saying: LOVE.

One time I was in an Earthly gathering; All of us, Black and White, were breaking Bread together. A Black Sister came to attend. With Tears streaming down Her Eyes, She said: "Such Love!" This is the Banqueting House I am talking about, The Banqueting House of Heaven where the Saints of GOD gather together to partake in the Great Banquet of Love.

The Entrance to the Banqueting House is very Wide. The Chariots float overhead, ready to take you out and bring you in, to tour all over GOD's Heaven crossing the Celestial Sea, sailing up among the Bells, but nothing ever Higher than the Heavenly Choir.

The Musicians and Entertainers, who entertain at the Banquets of this Earth and go into the White House and Buckingham Palace and the Palaces of this Earth, would not have to drink whiskey or wine to pep up the Banquet or Heaven.

There will not be any need of any Cocktails, Olives or Onions, Vodka or Gin, Bourbon, Rye or Scotch. We will all drink of the new Wine of Heaven which be supplied by Jesus. The Earthly will be turned into the Heavenly and it will be Everlasting Satisfaction.

There will be no more needs of Spoons and Dishes that will have to be Washed. Everything in the Heavenly Banqueting House will be Pure and Clean.

This is GOD'S BANQUETING HOUSE.

## **12.**

### **ETERNITY, AND WHERE IS IT?**

Jesus, Took Me To The Windows To Look Out Into Eternity.

On The Right Hand of GOD, The Father several thousand miles from the Throne, you will be able to look out into Eternity. You will not need a Telescope; You will have special eyes to see when you are in Heaven and you will be able to make trips into Eternity without the aid of of any Man-Made VEHICLE.

Eternity is without ending and without beginning. GOD, The Father, is the SAME, Without Beginning and Without Ending for He is the GOD of the Heavens and, also, the GOD of Eternity.

GOD's Creation is beyond the grasp of comprehension of the Human Mind. When you get to Heaven, you will understand it all. As I looked out into Eternity with Jesus and into the tremendous reality of the Planets out there, I knew that it will be Beautiful and Exciting to make trips out there and Land on the Planets to meet People, GOD's People, who never fell to Satan's Sin like the People of this World.

Satan has no power over these Planets out there, not even the stars which shine and Glorify GOD. He is restricted to this Earth to this Planet because GOD cast Him out of Heaven and He came whirling through and landed right on this Planet, the Earth. That is why Adam and Eve fell in the Garden. Under GOD's Power In The Universe, He was a Prince of Heaven and He never lost His power here upon the Earth; There was established a Battle between GOD and Satan.

The Word says: "Choose You This Day Whom Ye Will Serve," also, "And Who Is On The Lord's Side?" GOD Is A Spirit And Those Who Worship Him Must Worship Him In Spirit And In Truth. To be Baptized into the Spirit World, you become a Soldier for Jesus, to Destroy the Works of the Devil and His Angels and Let GOD judge what to do with Them for GOD is a JUST Judge.

As I looked out into Eternity through the Windows of Heaven, the Glorious Lights and Colors were so Beautiful that my soul felt an urge to go out there and explore.

Eternity is where GOD and Jesus came from, Out of Eternity, to make an Earth and a Heaven and create a People as His Own upon the Earth. But, the Devil got mad and messed up the whole thing.

GOD loved Man and the Earth that He created, the Fish and the Sea, the Cattle on a thousand hills, and the Birds in the Air, but, ESPECIALLY Man. My, how GOD must have loved us: For GOD so loved the World and what He had created that He gave His only Begotten Son to be born of a Virgin and Fathered by the The Holy Ghost, to Die upon Calvary and Shed His Blood that We might have life and have It more ABUNDANTLY.!! Do not MISS Heaven, you will miss it all.

## **13.**

### **THE BOOK OF LIFE**

In Heaven there is a Book and It is a Great Big Book, not just a Book with Thousands; It is a Book with s Numbered In The Millions.

And there is only One allowed to open that Book and that One is Jesus, Who is of the Line of David, The Bright and Shining, Morning Star, The Sacrifice for all times Who Shed His Blood On Calvary.

Of all the Host of Heaven, there is only One who can open that Book and that is Jesus, The One Who came rolling through Babylon, The Son of GOD, The Alpha and The Omega, The

One Son of God, The One without Beginning and without Ending. He, Jesus, has a right to open that Book for He paid the Price for our Souls on Calvary; It is the Lamb's Book of Life.

Jesus is The Lamb and He brought us Life. He gave us life that we might have life more Abundantly, for Life in Heaven is abundance for you.

Jesus walked with me over to the Great Book and opened that Book and there was my Name, Percy, interpreted into my Heavenly Name. I cannot tell my Heavenly Name now; The Earthly beings are not allowed to know it. All Names will be changed in Heaven and won't be Percy, Tom or Dick anymore. The Power of Jesus to open The Book comes from GOD, The Father and what a Tremendous Book It Is.

The Lids are Gold and the s are Red representing the Blood of Calvary. On Calvary, He set us free by the Shedding of His Blood

.

Don't Miss Heaven; It is not worth It .

"And I Stood Upon The Sand Of The Sea, And Saw A Beast Rise Up Out Of The Sea, Having Seven Heads And Ten Horns, And Upon His Horns Ten Crowns, And Upon His Heads The Name Of Blasphemy."

"And He Opened His Mouth In Blasphemy Against GOD, To Blaspheme His Name, And His Tabernacle, And Them That Dwell In Heaven. "

"And All That Dwell Upon The Earth Shall Worship Him, Whose Names Are Not Written In The Book Of Life Of The Lamb Slain From The Foundation Of The World."

"If Any Man Have An Ear, Let Him Hear. " Revelation 13:1, 6, 8 and 9.

## **14.**

### **THE COMING OF THE LORD IS AT HAND**

"Whosoever Shall Seek To Save His Life Shall Lose It; And Whosoever Shall Lose His Life Shall Preserve It. I Tell You, In That Night There Shall Be Two Men In One Bed; The One Shall Be Taken, And The Other Shall Be Left. Two Women Shall Be Grinding Together; The One Shall Be Taken, And The Other Left. Two Men Shall Be In The Field; The One Shall Be Taken; And The Other Left." Luke 17:33, 34, 35 and 36.

No Man knows the Time nor the Hour when our Lord Jesus is going to come back in Person with His Glorified Body to take away His Bride, The Raptured Millions who will take over the City Four Square, Built and Prepared and Furnished for His Saints to Occupy.

I remember a few weeks before I received The Baptism of the Holy Ghost Speaking In Other Tongues as the Spirit gave utterance and before me a Sign was on the Wall in back of the platform which read in Great and Bold Letters:

### **JESUS IS COMING SOON!**

In the midst of the glorious meeting with the Instruments playing and the People singing, "He Is Coming Soon, He Is Coming Soon," and as a young man of twenty, this sign that said that Jesus should be coming back to this Earth Startled me.

The word "SOON" meant to me a few days. And less than a few days it shall be; for a day is as a thousand years with the Lord and it is almost two days since Jesus left this Earth and Ascended up to Heavnen and Sat down on the Right Hand of GOD, The Father." Jesus still sits at the Right Hand of GOD, The Father and yet Jesus can appear anywhere, and place or many places at one Time. This is The Wonderful, Glorious Reality of Jesus; because He is our Saviour and He can come to us anywhere, anytime.

Jesus is not going to come to the Racetrack or the Saloon or the Gambling place or among Political Intriguers or among the Spiritual Wickedness in High Places. Jesus is coming for those who are found Watching and Waiting. Daily, I look into the Skies and watch for His coming. After being with Jesus in Heaven and after Heaven becoming so real to me, It is Impossible for me to get my mind on Earthly Things or partake in them. In other words, I Eat to Live, not Live to Eat.

After Studying the Word of GOD and knowing that GOD's day is a Thousand Years, the "COMING SOON" is now very close to me. The World will not be able to hold the Bride much longer. Every Scripture, every Action, every Spiritual and Devine Intervention of this Earth points to the Coming of The Lord of the Heaven. The Evil Forces of Power, The Political Intrigue and The Spiritual Wickedness in High Places on this Earth will not hold His Saints back. For the Scriptures tell us when The Trumpet Sounds and The Dead in Christ will Rise, the Ears of those that know His Will shall respond to the Sound of The Trumpet.

Again I say: "Blessed Is He That Is Found Waiting And Watching." I know what the feeling is to discard the Power of Gravity and start going up in the Spirit of The Lord. It is Miraculous and Exciting and a Spectacular Feeling, just Feeling Your Soul Soul lift off this Earth and Go. But, what will it be when your Body goes, Too? As they saw Jesus going up toward Heaven with His Body and His Soul Together. In like manner all of us shall go to occupy the City Four Square.

"And He Led Them Out As Far As To Bethany, And He Lifted Up His Hands, And Blessed Them. And It Came To Pass, While He Blessed Them, He Was Parted From Them, And Carried Up Into Heaven. And They Worshipped Him, And Returned To Jerusalem With Great Joy: And Were Continually In The Temple, Praising And Blessing GOD." Luke 24:50, 51, 52 and 53.

Jesus was crucified on Calvary and He Tasted Death. The Grave could not hold Him, Death could not keep Him and we that are in Him will come out of the Grave in like Manner. Daily, I scan the Skies and Scripture is so real to me: BLESSED IS HE THAT IS FOUND WAITING AND WATCHING.

I dream night after night of the Coming of The Lord. If He should come as a Thief in the Night, to me He will come as a Surprise because it is my habit to wake up Six or Seven Times in the Night, Waiting and Watching for the Coming of The Lord. The Coming of The Lord is the foremost thought on my mind because Heaven is now so real to me.

The awful things that happen upon this Earth: The Murders, The Terrorist Acts, The Political Intrigues, The Arguments over Politics, The Conservatists or The Liberals, The Democrats or The Republicans, The Extreme Rightists or The Extreme Leftists; They all mean nothing in my Mind. My Mind is on the Lord Jesus Christ.

The Jesus that walked the Shores of Galilee, The Jericho Road and Eventually, The Walk up the Hill to Calvary and The Cross to Die there and then to Rise Again; The One Who conquered Death, The One Who conquered Sin, The One Who conquered The Devil, He is the Head of my Party, The Party of the Redeemed. Join my party and you shall have Eternal Life. Join my party and you Shall Live In Heaven!

And remember, this is the party of The Millions, and even The Billions, who will Worship GOD in His Temple; The Temple that will be Big enough to hold us all, There to Worship Him forever and ever. Jesus will be our King, for we have joined Him in His Kingdom. We are a part of His Citizenship, Citizens of the Most High GOD, a Citizen of Heaven. Join our Party. Register now, for this is the Everlasting Party, this is the Everlasting Kingdom, the Kingdom of GOD.

What an awful time that will be for those who do not hear the sound of the Trumpet. Instead, they will be Squealing at the Racetrack, mixing in the Ballyhoo or Blasting away in Political Oratory or Enjoying the Pleasures of this World. These will not hear the Trumpet; They will be too much occupied in their own enjoyments of this Earth. The Trumpet will only sound in the Ears of the Redeemed: IT IS SUPPER TIME, COME HOME. YES, JESUS IS COMING SOON. BE READY.

"He's coming soon, He's coming soon, with joy we welcome His Returning." Can you imagine a dark night, for Jesus is coming as a thief in the night. However, in some parts of the World, it will be daylight. The Scripture does not say, He is coming in the Night, but, as a Thief in the Night. There is neither Male nor Female in Heaven. For Jesus to come as a Thief in the Night, He will be coming to the workers in the field, to the women at the Mill, to those that are sleeping in the bed and to everyone in all walks of life. You see, it may be light in the United States and dark in Russia, or China or Africa. Jesus knew when He made the statement, "I Will Come Again". He will be coming for His Own out of every Nation and Kindred and Tongue. That is why it is very necessary to fulfill His Command: "This Gospel", The Words of Jesus, "Must Be Published In Every Nation Under Heaven." And the message to the world now is: BE READY FOR THE COMING OF JESUS.



Try to visualize in your Earthly mind the Rapture of the Saints ascending into the air out of every Nation, the Millions of Bodies coming out of their graves and sailing upwards into the Air to meet Jesus. Blessed are you that will have a part in the First Resurrection.

There will be no more Sting of Death or the Grave for the Redeemed. The Sting of Death and the Grave leave you when you are filled with His Spirit, The Spirit of the Living GOD.

THIS IS THE FIRST RESURRECTION.

## 15.

### JESUS IS MY LORD

Jesus is my Lord in the Ministry of which the Lord has made me a part, for Jesus is my Main Minister, He is my Potentate, My Chief Bishop of my Soul, and He will be King of Kings and Lord of Lords after His Crowning.

I walked with Jesus in Heaven for Five and One Half Days. Jesus told me many things and He appears to me unto this day. This very week I was in a meeting and GOD was moving and He was Blessing us. The Congregation was Praising and Glorifying GOD before the Throne in this particular Meeting. The Spirit of the Lord had slain me flat on the platform.

The Congregation was Praising GOD in the Spirit as I lay flat on my back! And the whole Host of Angels appeared to me on the platform with the Beautiful Face of Jesus in the Midst of the Angels looking down at me! Jesus was pleased because we were all worshipping GOD The Father. And the Worship of the Lord is so precious and that is what it is all about. First, win Souls; For he that winneth souls is wise.

"The Fruit Of The Righteous Is A Tree Of Life; And He That Winneth Souls Is Wise."  
Proverbs 11:30.

When Souls are washed in the Blood, this is your Ticket, your Entrance into Heaven .

"And He Said Unto Jesus, Lord, Remember Me When Thou Comest Into Thy Kingdom. And Jesus Said Unto Him, Verily I Say Unto Thee, Today Shalt Thou Be With Me In Paradise."  
Luke 23:42 and 43.

There are Seven Levels of Heaven, The Outer Perimeter, Inside The Second Gate which is the Third Heaven; The Fourth Level Heaven where The Altar and The River of Life are; The Fifth Heaven where The Temple, The New Jerusalem and The Banqueting House are; The Sixth Heaven are The Great Mountain, all The Beautiful Colors, The Seats of Authority, Love, Administration, Knowledge and Wisdom. I sat on all of these under the Shadow of the Almighty GOD, His Left Hand Outstretched, Covered by Millions of Feathers. The Entrance to The Throne, The Incense, all Kinds of Musical Instruments playing, The Celestial Air of GOD, and so many other Realities, all were before me.



The Seventh Heaven is The Top Throne where GOD sits, Mighty, Beautiful, The Father of Jesus and Jesus sitting on His Right Hand. How beautiful and beyond any Earthly description is The Throne of GOD!

It was our GOD The Father who said: "Let There Be Light," And there was Light. GOD The Father by His Commands can command anything and He is Light. The Word says, The Words of GOD The Father: Let there be Light, and there was Light before He made the Sun. GOD put the Sun in Place, Set His Fire in it and without GOD's Fire in the Sun, everything would die and freeze in this Orbit of the Sun. For God is a Consuming Fire.

Heaven is, also, a Fire where the Fire of GOD exists; Heaven is a Stationary Planet as is the Sun. The Stars that sing unto GOD Orbit Heaven and they are on the move all the time. However, the Outside of Heaven is not created as the Sun. There are trees, rivers, valleys and beautiful mountains on the Outside of Heaven and the Fire of GOD is on the Inside of the Heavenly Planet. The entire Inside of Heaven is operated by the Spirit of GOD and Water which causes everything to live in Heaven. For Heaven is Alive. The Seventh Heaven is Beautiful covering a vast area of millions of square miles.

Around The Throne of GOD are Four and Twenty Elders with Bells above that ring out every time Souls are saved on this Earth. When the last Soul is saved and the Judgment is over and the complete Worship of GOD is in Operation, The Bells will ring forever; They will never stop.

The Music will always be playing on every kind of an instrument that was given Man the Knowledge to make. Heaven will be a continous Worship of GOD, Joy Unspeakable and Full of Glory.

After the Rapture, the Judgment, and the Last Bugle has been blown, all Joy will be Speakable and the Worship of GOD will be Forever and Ever and Ever.



1985. MADISON SQUARE GARDEN,  
NEW YORK.



NEW YORK CITY IN  
MADISON SQUARE GARDEN 1985.

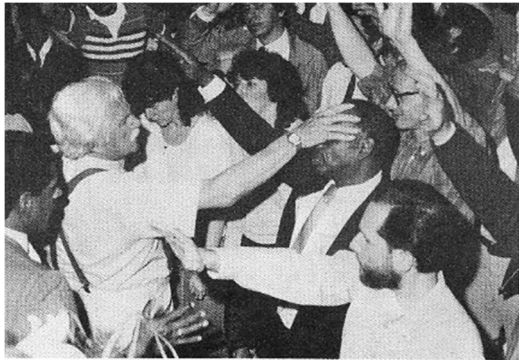
A GREAT DAY IN THE LORD.  
PRAYING FOR THE SICK.



POWER OF GOD WORKING IN A  
MIGHTY WAY, MADISON SQUARE  
GARDEN N.Y. 1985

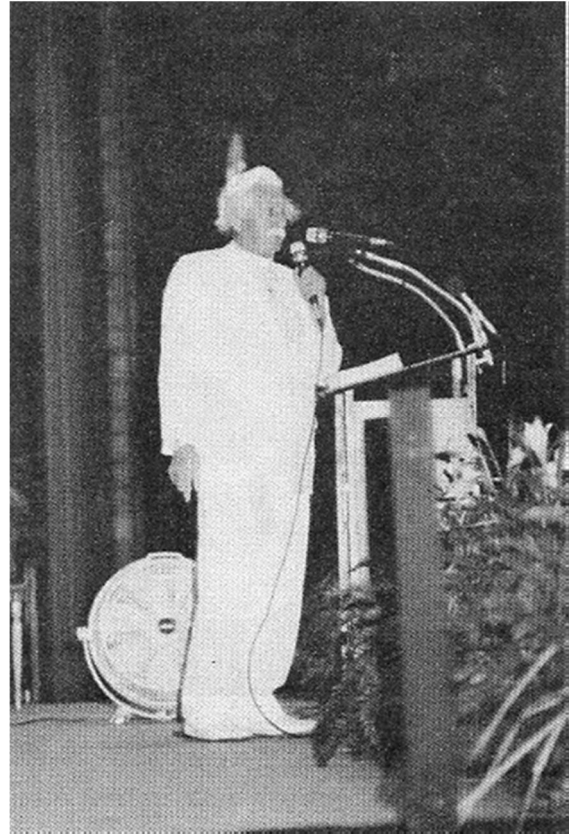


DR. PERCY COLLETT  
ATLANTA, GEORGIA 1983.



POWER OF GOD MOVING  
AS THEY WERE RECEIVING THE  
HOLY GHOST SPEAKING IN  
OTHER TONGUES.

MADISON SQUARE GARDEN, N.Y.  
1985.



PRAYER AND ALTAR CALL TIME  
AT MADISON SQUARE GARDEN, N.Y.  
1985.



PREACHING UNDER THE  
ANOINTING MADISON SQUARE  
GARDEN, N.Y. 1985.

# THE MAP OF HEAVEN.

*Words done as it appears on the map. Use as a guide to explain what is there.*

<b>A</b> North Entrance Gate of JUDAH	<b>W</b> PATHWAY TO THE BOTTOMLESS PIT
<b>B</b> Flowers of GOD'S Glory	<b>Z1</b> The Original Ark Of Testimony
<b>C</b> Table of Jesus	<b>Z2</b> The Spiritual Vale of Purity
<b>D</b> TO GOD'S ENDLESS UNIVERSE (Includes Earth)	<b>Z3</b> 7 Spirits and the Golden Lampstand of the 7 Churches
<b>E</b> WINDOWS TO THE UNIVERSE	<b>Z4</b> SANCTUARY OF THE HOLY GHOST (Walls Constantly Changing Colors of the Rainbow)
<b>F</b> Spiritual Boundary of the City Four Square	<b>K1</b> JASPER
<b>G</b> THE BANQUETING HOUSE	<b>K2</b> SAPPHIRE
<b>H</b> FRUIT TREES OF HEAVEN (Skinless and Seedless)	<b>K3</b> CHALCEDONY
<b>I</b> Space Reserved for the Redeemed of Earth to Sing Songs of Praise to the Trinity	<b>K4</b> EMERALD
<b>J</b> RIVER OF LIFE	<b>K5</b> SARDUS
<b>K</b> WALLS OF PURE GOLD	<b>K6</b> CHRYSOLITE
<b>L</b> FLOODGATE	<b>K7</b> BERYLE
<b>M</b> North Entrance Gate of REUBEN	<b>K8</b> TOPAZ
<b>N</b> THE RAINBOW AND COVENANT OF GOD'S GLORY	<b>K9</b> CHRYSOPRASE
<b>O</b> ARMY OF JESUS Setting on White Horses	<b>K10</b> JACINTH
<b>P</b> North Entrance Gate of GAD	<b>K11</b> AMETHYST
<b>Q</b> SEA OF CRYSTAL GLASS	<b>1</b> CHRIST SETTING AT RIGHTHAND
<b>R</b> BUILDING FOUR SQUARE (Administration & Affairs)	<b>2</b> THE FOUR BEAST
<b>S</b> TWENTY FOUR ELDERS	<b>3</b> ANGELS WORSHIPPING THE ORDER OF SERIPHIN AND CHERIBIN
<b>T</b> THROWN OF GOD THE FATHER	<b>4</b> TREE OF LIFE Bears New Fruit Each Month. Leaves for Healing of all Nations
<b>U</b> Martyrs Holy Fire Under the Thrown of God	<b>5</b> TO INFINITY
<b>V</b> SEATS OF GLORY	
<b>V1</b> LOVE	
<b>V2</b> WISDOM	
<b>V3</b> KNOWLEDGE	
<b>V4</b> LONG SUFFERING	
<b>V5</b> LONG LIFE	
<b>X</b> BILLIONS OF ANGELS SINGING	

# The Map of Heaven





## **PART II: SECTION DIVIDE**

### **My Early Childhood and Growing Up In England**

#### **16.**

#### **PERCY SEES AN ANGEL**

"Now Samuel Did Not Yet Know The Lord, Neither Was The Word Of The Lord Yet Revealed Unto Him." "And The Lord Came, And Stood, And Called As At Other Times, Samuel, Samuel. Then Samuel Answered, Speak; For Thy Servant Heareth."

1st Samuel 3:7 and 10.

My mother went to be with Jesus at the age of 32. I was born in May 1902 in a very large house with large stairways, many rooms, attics and cellars. My mother was a Godly woman, daughter of Thomas Cox, a Minister of the Gospel and pastor of a church. My father was an Anglican of the Collett Line emigrating to England in the 13th century from France and I was taught that there were A Heaven, Angels and Jesus to Glorify and Devils to Shun.

Reality of all this was to come later.

"After This Manner Therefore Pray: Our Father Which Are In Heaven, Hallowed Be Thy Name. Thy Kingdom Come. Thy Will Be Done In Earth, As It Is In Heaven. Give Us This Day Our Daily Bread. And Forgive Us Our Debts, As We Forgive Our Debtors. And Lead Us Not Into Temptation, But Deliver Us From Evil: For Thine Is The Kingdom, And The Power, And The Glory, For Ever. Amen." Matthew 6:9 To 13. I learned the Lord's Prayer at a very early age, the Catechism, and to Pray every morning and night at the bedside.

One night, in the Spring of the year, I lay in my bed as a little boy, frightened, and lonely because I missed my Mother very much. I remember quite well some cold, lonely nights, crying for my Mother, who had gone to be with Jesus.

I was told by my Grandparents and the Servants that my Mother was in Heaven with the Angels, and not to cry because the Angels of the Lord would watch over me and protect me from all harm and danger.

While lying in my bed crying and lonely, a Beautiful Person appeared at the foot of my bed. For a moment or two I wondered who it was, so beautiful was the Person, and I asked: "Who Are You?" The answer was: "I Am Your Angel, Be Not Afraid, I Have To Be With You And Protect You All Of Your Life."

The Visitation of the Angel to me as a small boy was so real. I would think about my Angel very much. I had no more fear of going through those long hallways and big rooms and I even ventured into the dark cellar to explore what was down there. I knew that the Angel was with

me everywhere I went because the Angel had told me that He would go with me and be with me all the time.

"Be Not Forgetful To Entertain Strangers For Thereby Some Have Entertained Angels Unawares." Hebrews 13:2.

The next Christmas and old Tramp came by to beg bread at the door. His coat was tied together with bag string, His pants had big patches on them, and his shoes were sizes too big. The Housekeeper said to my father: "There Is A Tramp At The Door." My father said: "Let Us Take Him In, For It Is Christmas, We Will Let Him In To Keep Warm Before The Fire." The old man was so happy to be able to get in from the cold and sit before the big fire in the back kitchen to keep Himself warm. I peeked through the door from the inner kitchen, and I even ventured out to come closer to him. He said to me: "Do "You See My Wife In The Fire?" And He asked me what my name was, and I told him: 'Percy" I said, "Is There Somebody In That Fire? Wouldn't They Burn Up In The Fire? How Could Anyone Still Be Alive In The Fire?" And He told me that the Fire could not burn up spirits; For in the Fire was a Spirit.

He slept on the rug before the fire that night after eating a large bowl of soup, big slices of bread and hot tea. Next morning, I was so interested in the man that was in the back kitchen, that I got up early in the morning to talk to Him. When I entered the room, He was on his knees praying, thanking Jesus for the warmth of the fire and the hospitality my father had given to Him.

"For I Was An Hungred, And Ye Gave Me Meat: I Was Thirsty, And Ye Gave Me Drink: I Was a Stranger, And Ye Took Me In: Naked, And Ye Clothed Me: I Was Sick And Ye Visited Me:" and "-Verily, I Say Unto You, Inasmuch As Ye Have Done It Unto One Of The Least Of These My Brethren, Ye Have Done It Unto Me." Matthew 25: 35,36 and 40.

The next day the sun came out quite bright, and my father prepared a room for the old man next to the horse stable with a bed, a stove, a kerosene lamp, and clean sheets. In the afternoon I saw Him carrying buckets of water to take a bath, and my father took Him to town to buy Him some clothes. My father decided to keep the old man on the farm. And after He had the new clothes on, a hair cut and a shave, He looked like any other English Gentleman, ready to go to Church and be one of us. Many times I walked to Church with Him hand in hand, and He would sit next to me. He became my close friend and He told me about Jesus. He was like an angel to me.

At Christmas time it was customary for the hand bell ringers to come and ring the bells to the tune of the Christmas Carols, such as Silent Night; Oh Come All Ye Faithful And Others. The bell ringers could not speak English; They were German, and they took their bells from door to door. How they could ring those bells! My father would always go out and put money in the collection pan and they became very happy, speaking German among themselves.

To my surprise the old tramp could talk to them; He was German. He had lost His leg in the war and He had a wooden leg. My father named the old man, Ned; He had said that His name was Edward.

He went to work for my father, wooden leg and all, cleaning up the buildings, raking the yards, And best of all, eating three meals a day. I remember some friends coming from far away and they asked my father: "Where Did You Get That Old Gentleman That Is Working

For You?" "Oh, He Just Came To The Door To Get Bread And I Decided To Keep Him On. He Seemed So Kind."

We had a groom named Willy who cleaned the carriages, groomed the horses, cleaned the harness and sone the brass on the harness. It was quite a sight to see the carriage and the two black horses, nicely groomed, go to market. Willy stayed with us for many years. One night He called to my father's bedroom: "The Carriage Is Ready To Go, The Horses Are All Hooked Up." My father answered out of the window: "Go Back To Bed, Willy, You Are Sleep Walking." I said to Him "Willy, What Makes You Walk In Your Sleep?" He said, "I Don't Know, But It Makes Me Feel So Foolish When I Do It." Ned led Willy to Jesus. Ned would milk the cows, and the butter was churned and that country butter sure was good. I left home and went to live with my Grandfather in order to work on His farm, bringing loads of hay from the valley below, to be stacked up for winter feed. During that time I walked through the meadows in the dark to visit my other Grandfather, Grandfather Cox. While bringing a load of hay up the hill, the lead mare, Bonnie, reared and would not go further, an unusual thing for the old mare to do; she was such a faithful work horse, very gentle and very quiet.

I walked forward to see why Bonnie would not go on, and in front of her stood my Angel. Bonnie had seen Him before I did. It was the same Angel that I had seen at the foot of my bed. The Angel said to me: "You Are The Servant Of The Lord And You Must Go To Many Lands To Tell Them About Jesus."

"And The Angel Of The Lord Went Further, And Stood In A Narrow Place, Where Was No Way To Turn Either To The Right Hand Or To The Left. And When The Ass Saw The Angel Of The Lord, She Fell Down Under Balaam." Numbers 22:26 and 27.

And this is truly happening today, and it is our desire to translate this testimony into every language under Heaven. And The Angel's instructions are coming to pass.

I went to my Grandfather Cox and I told Him that I had seen an Angel today. My Grandfather said: "Did You, My Boy?" and then He added: "You Are Now Come Out From Under My Jurisdiction And In The Hands Of The Lord." I began to prepare myself to go on this world journey. The Angel of the Lord appeared to me on many occasions between the ages of 14 and 18. I would dream dreams and I would begin to have visions of Heaven. I dreamed many times that I saw my Mother in Heaven, and Jesus. Many times walking through the woods and the trees, The Angel Would walk with me and tell me that I must obey The Voice of the Lord. At the age of eighteen, I left home crossing the ocean, afterwards going to many lands.





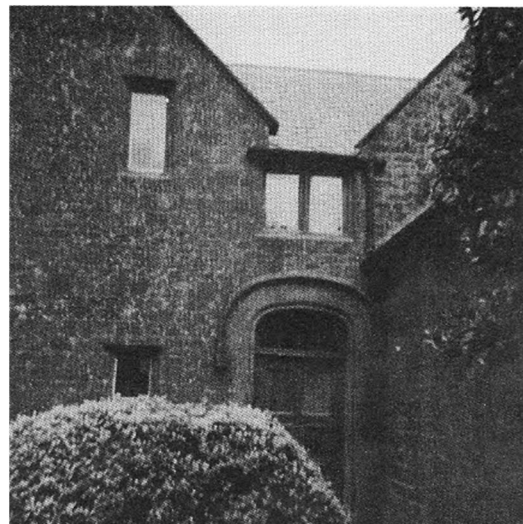
MY FATHER AT THE AGE OF 90  
STILL  
HANDLING HIS OWN BUSINESS, HE  
LIVED A LIFE OF TRUST IN GOD



THIS IS WHERE I SAW THE ANGEL  
AT  
THE AGE OF FIVE. EDGEHILL,  
ENGLAND



GRANDFATHER AND  
GRANDMOTHER COX



"FRONT ENTRANCE OF MY HOME  
WHERE THE  
LIGHTNING CAME DOWN AND  
SPEWED THE  
RAIN ALL OVER THE PLACE WHEN I  
WAS  
SIX YEARS OLD. EDGEHILL,  
ENGLAND.



I REMEMBER THE CHRISTMAS  
QUITE WELL  
WHEN THE OLD TRAMP CAME TO  
THE DOOR.

AT JOY OF HEAVEN BIBLE  
INSTITUTE



BACK OF THE HOUSE AT  
"EDGEHILL, ENGLAND INCLUDING  
THE  
BARN DOOR WHERE WILLIE GOT  
THE  
BUGGY OUT IN THE EARLY  
MORNING

## 17.

### MY MOTHER WENT TO HEAVEN

My oldest brother, Cecil, was very close to me. We would pray together, go to Church together and we would talk about my leaving to go to the Mission Field. My brother took my leaving very hard. He asked me if the Lord would let me stay in England and do Missionary work there. This was impossible, I had to obey the Voice of the Lord.

When my papers were being processed and my passage made ready to travel on the Aquatania to New York, it was necessary to have a medical examination because in those days, no cripple, or unhealthy person, was allowed to enter into America. In the conversation with the doctor it was brought out that it was necessary for the Mother to sign the papers. The doctor asked me if my Mother could be reached. My Father's answer to the doctor was: "Percy Lost

His Mother When He Was Five Years Old; He Has Always Missed His Mother Very Much And Many Times He Has Asked About His Mother." My father's answer to my questions about Mother always was: "Your Mother Was A Precious, Godly Mother Who Spent Hours In Prayer Every Week." And my father always called my Mother an angel.

My father missed my Mother very much, also. After Her death and funeral, He hardly spoke to anyone for a whole year. Her Body was placed into a casket or coffin in the house. I saw them place Her Body into the coffin. This, I could not understand: Why should they place my Mother in a Box?

The next morning I saw her coffin placed into the buggy; I shall never forget that. The buggy had a section under the seat where packages could be put when my father went to market. We were ready to start the funeral journey which was twenty three miles form Edgehill to Oddington, five miles form the city of Oxford. There were many vehicles in that funeral journey; All horses and buggies, beautiful horses. In those days there were very few automobiles.

Arriving at Grandpa Collett's beautiful home, The casket with my Mother in it, was placed in the parlor with many wreaths of flowers, Roses and many other kinds of flowers. There were so many flowers which the neighbours and friends had brought. They filled the parlor until it was so full that many of them had to be placed outside the front door. I ran into the parlor and cried. I told my Mother to get "out of that box.

The servants had prepared roast duck, fresh green peas from the garden, new potatoes and deep dish apple pie for the many guests that were present.

I could not eat my dinner; I just wanted my Mother. The Housekeeper who was in charge of me, told me that my Mother would not be back anymore; That She had gone to Heaven to be with Jesus and that I would see her there some day. I told Her that I wanted to see my Mother now and that I was ready to go to Heaven right now so that I could see my Mother.

A little child like me could not understand what Heaven was and why my Mother should want to leave me. And I cried, and cried, and cried. The funeral procession from the house to the Church started at one o'clock in the afternoon and so many people were attending that it reached from the house to the Church yard several times. Hundreds of people attended because my Mother was really loved by everyone.

It was arranged that I should stay in the house with the housekeeper and not go to the Burial Service. I slipped away from the housekeeper and ran down the road to the Church yard, running between the people's legs and came to the Graveside of my Mother. I cried aloud: "Get My Mother Out Of There, Don't Put Her Down Into That Great Big Hole!"

After the funeral both my Grandmothers held me on their knees and loved me and tried to explain where my Mother had gone. I said: "Why Did They Put My Mother Down Into That Great Big Hole? Why Could She Not Have Gone Straight To Heaven Without Putting Her Down Into The Ground And Burying Her With All That Dirt?"

My little mind was working on that problem. I was known to ask many questions as a little boy. Everyone tried to satisfy me with different answers, but no one could; No Answer was good enough for me.

I stayed with my Grandmother for several days. But, try as they might, no answer would satisfy me about my Mother. I just wanted my Mama, to feel her arms around me and hold me close to her breast.

After returning to Edgehill to the great big house, that was the time when my Angel appeared to me and gave me comfort to my soul, something that no human had been able to do. Each night I would dream about my Mother and Heaven and Jesus, that JESUS about whom many persons had told me. Throughout my entire life I have had dreams and visions of the Glory World. Many times I dreamed that I saw my Mother in Heaven with Jesus. And one day that dream became a reality.



MY MOTHER  
WHO WENT TO BE WITH JESUS  
AT THE AGE OF THIRTY TWO



ODDINGTON, ENGLAND I SPENT  
MUCH TIME HEREAT MY  
GRANDFATHER COLLETT'S HOME

## 18.

### I WAS A TEENAGER AT THE FARM

"And He Said Unto Them, How Is It That Ye Sought Me? Wist Ye Not That I Must Be About My Father's Business? And They Understood Not The Saying Which He Spake Unto Them. And He Went Down With Them, And Came To Nazareth, And Was Subject Unto Them: But His Mother Kept All These Sayings In Her Heart." Luke 2:49 to 51.

Life around the Manor House, where I was born, was not the same. My Mama was gone and the place seemed so empty. My sister, Maude, who was born at the time of my Mother's Death, was taken away to be raised by my Mother's sister, whose husband was a Minister of the Gospel and Pastor of a Baptist Church. Uncle Rider was an extremely religious man and His convictions about religion were very strict; He was a Preacher of Holiness.

At the Manor House the Servants would try to make me happy. Almost every night I would dream of Heaven. In my young mind I wondered where Heaven could be. I started school at the age of four, learning the A B C. Twice one is two, and twice two is four, etc. I had one year of schooling at my Mother's Death and that conditioned me to be alert and able to observe many things even at that young age.

The school was in Radway, a mile and one quarter walk down through meadows, over fences and on into the school court yard. It was quite a large school with several hundred children attending. The school taught students from the age of four years until the age of fourteen, ten years of strict schooling.

Other students found out that an Angel had visited me in my bedroom. Many times at the noon day recess, students would gather around me and question me what the Angel looked like. They considered me somewhat of a Spiritual influence over them. And When I would have a dream at night, the next day they would ask me about what I had dreamed. They were very sincere with their questions and not one seemed to disbelieve me.

Across the road from the school house lived Leonard Fox, My Godfather. I would walk across the road to His house, have a nice cup of hot tea or some hot soup along with my sandwiches. That would warm me up in the cold winter time. Mr. and Mrs. Fox would ask me sometimes what I had dreamed about the night before. They would ask me what my Mother looked like and they would say to one another: "His Dreams Have To Be True Because Percy Sees His Mother Exactly As She Looked, Even To The Color Of Her Hair And Eyes, And Everything Else."

My sister, Edith, the oldest in the family, became like a mother to us. It was our custom in the home to all pray together the Lord's Prayer, read in the Catechism and also, read in the Prayer of Daily Thankfulness. One night my dream was so real that I came down singing in the early morning. Even my father said: "What Did You Dream About, Percy?" My answer was: "Mama" And when I would tell Him, tears would come streaming down His cheeks. My father, too, knew that my dreams were real because I could explain my Mother's looks so well.

It was our custom to attend Church at Radway every Sunday and sometimes in the village of Oxhill, which had a small Church. It was so much different than the large Church at Radway. My father would take the big Family Bible every evening and read to us a .

I was twelve years old when World War One broke out. We had moved from the Manor House to the Village of Shotswell, which had a big Church with a very high Spire. The Bells would ring at Christmas and the Minister, Dr. Wyatt, was a very Godly man; And He, too, would ask me many times about the dreams and visions I had about Heaven. I remember the day very well when War was declared. I was twelve years old. The Reserves were being called up and the Activity of all of England was one big preparation to fight. Edward, The Peacemaker, had died and George The Fifth became King. We could hear the guns of the

Battle of Jutland between the German and the British Navy. This was a kind of a Gentlemen's Battle; It almost sounded like a game of Football or Cricket.

There were no Atrocities committed between the German and the British Navy. Whenever one or the other ship was sunk, sailors were picked up out of the waters and put on either the British or the German ships. I remember one of the British sailors telling of the German sausage that he ate while a prisoner on a German ship. Many of the prisoners were exchanged. The Battle ended. What was left of either side of the two Navies returned to their own respective bases and submarine warfare became very dirty on both sides.

During the War time many hundreds of Belgium Refugees came flocking to England and, also, quite a few French. This was the part of the World where my family had originated, The border area between France and Belgium. My family moved into England in the Thirteenth Century, buying land and estates. Longevity was not known then; People died between the ages of thirty and forty, diseases were on the ram, the Plague wiped out thousands of People all over the southern part of England. My family, being sturdy and strong, survived; and they began to increase in number. They were Church builders and Stone Masons. The Religious background was Catholic and that fitted in quite well into the Society of the British Churchmen.

In the generations back then, It was always Church on Sunday, Prayer before going to bed and Prayer before breakfast the next morning.

"The Angel Of The Lord Encampeth Around About Them That Fear Him And Delivereth Them." Psalms 34:7 and Psalms 91 and Verse 11. "For He Shall Give His Angels Charge Over Thee, To Keep Thee In All Thy Ways."

The thought of Angels was always on my mind. And when I heard of the report of seeing Angels at Mons during the First World War, it made me very happy. Many People believed that Angels had come to intervene and stop the War. Angels have always been a part of our family life on both sides, my Mother's and my Father's. When my Mother sent postcards to her mother and her sisters, It was always with an angel on the card. Angels were on all of our minds...There was always talk of the Guardian Angels sent to this Earth to watch over us.

Most of the men folk were gone to War. This left the homeland to be without a labour force on farms and without workers in factories. Everyone had to work; old men, women, and boys and girls. Our families were all farmers and I started milking cows at the age of eight, working from daylight to dark during school vacations.

"A Sound Of Battle Is In The Land, And Of Great Destruction." Jeremiah 50:22.

The Germans had invaded France and you could hear big, Notorious Bertha. The Biggest Gun built at that time by the Germans, shooting from the middle of France, landing shells in Paris.

Then the German Zeppelins came over bombing England. You could hear the drone of their engines going overhead. Coventry and Warwickshire had several Munitions factories and they were bombed. England's Airforce was in training. Each day you could watch the Pilots go up, looping the loop and practicing to attack the Zeppelins. The Preacher's son and the Liquor store owner's son, both were Pilots, flying the small planes all over the place. The engines of these fighter planes were lubricated with Castor Oil. The machine guns mounted before the



Pilots were timed to shoot between the propellers. The City of Coventry became one of the main targets for these bombings. Also, The Southern Coast of England was Bombed.

There were Canadian Pilots attached to the British Airforce. They practiced and practiced and practiced. One plane came down on our Neighbour's Farm. I was the first to be at the scene of the crash. The engine had sunk several feet into the ground and the Pilot's Body was lying on the top of the engine. The rest of the plane was scattered. An Inquest was held and I was called to be one of the witnesses. The decision was: The Pilot Died Fighting For His Country. His Widow Received The Victoria Cross.

The Pilots practiced for about another week. The next time the Zeppelins came over, the Pilots were ready to attack. And they did attack and the Zeppelins came down in flames all over the place. One of them falling into the middle of our potato patch. It ruined the entire crop; The flames burned off all the tops of the potato plants. Another one fell into a cluster of trees, burning all the leaves off the trees, leaving them looking black and bare. That was the last attack by Zeppelins. The War was getting nastier than ever. I remember when the first Americans came to England, they came by train loads. We called them Doughboys; That is how they first came by that name.

I had trained as a young boy to guard the Coast Line just in case the Germans would invade England. The American boys coming to participate in the War looked very young. I was fifteen years old and some of them looked younger than I was. Some of them had only five or six weeks training, so they said. The American Officer let me use his Pistol to shoot targets, and truthfully, I was hitting the target almost every time.

We had big cans of milk and the soldiers with their cups consumed all of the milk was suppose to go to London; They said that they had not tasted a bit of milk since they left their homes. I wonder sometimes how many of these young men that I saw are lying now at Flanders Field.

"And If Ye Walk Contrary Unto Me, And Will Not Hearken Unto Me; I Will Bring Seven Times More Plagues Upon You According To Your Sins." Leviticus 26:21.

I remember right well when the Flu attacked; Thousands died all around us in our Neighbourhood. My Grandfather prayed for me and I was not attacked with this horrible virus. I helped carry the neighbour's boy to his grave; He was my friend and he had died of the Flu. The Lord spared me for a purpose because the Angel's instructions had to be carried out. I remember well the Angel appearing to me in 1916, the coldest winter that we ever had. It was Christmas time and the Angel said, "You Shall Be Spared Of Any Of These Diseases, For You Have To Go And Carry The Message Of The Lord To All The Parts Of The Earth."



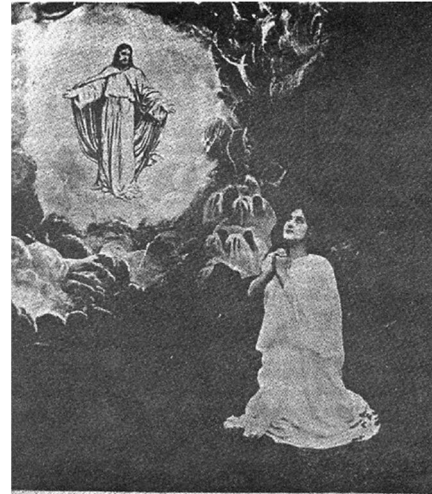
**ROCK OF AGES (1).**

Rock of Ages, cleft for me,  
Let me hide myself in Thee,  
Let the water and the blood  
From Thy riven side which flowed;  
Be of sin the double cure,  
Cleanse me from its guilt and power.

**ROCK OF AGES (1)**

Rock of Ages, cleft for me,  
Let me hide myself in Thee,  
Let the water and the blood  
From Thy river side which flowed;  
Be of sin the double cure,  
Cleanse me from its guilt and power.

"PICTURE POSTCARD (1 THRU 3) MY  
MOTHER  
SENT TO HER MOTHER AND FAMILY  
IN 1899.



**JESU, LOVER OF MY SOUL (1).**

Jesu, lover of my soul,  
Let me to Thy bosom fly,  
While the gathering waters roll,  
While the tempest still is high.  
Hide me, O my Saviour hide,  
Till the storm of life is past,  
Safe into the haven guide,  
Oh, receive my soul at last!

**JESU, LOVER OF MY SOUL (1).**

Jesu, lover of my soul,  
Let me to Thy bosom fly,  
While the gathering waters roll,  
While the tempest still is high.  
Hide me, O my Saviour hide,  
Till the storm of life is past,  
Safe into the haven guide,  
Oh, receive my soul at last!





**ROCK OF AGES (2).**

Nothing in my hand I bring,  
Simply to Thy cross I cling;  
Naked, come to Thee for dress;  
Helpless, look to Thee for grace;  
Foul, I to the fountain fly—  
Wash me, Saviour, or I die.

**ROCK OF AGES (2).**

Nothing in my hand I bring,  
Simply to Thy cross I cling;  
Naked, come to Thee for dress;  
Helpless, look to Thee for grace;  
Foul, I to the fountain fly  
Wash me, Saviour, or I die.



**JESU, LOVER OF MY SOUL (2).**

Other refuge have I none,  
Hangs my helpless soul on Thee;  
Leave, ah! leave me not alone,  
Still support and comfort me.  
All my trust on Thee is stayed,  
All my help from Thee I bring;  
Cover my defenceless head  
With the shadow of Thy wing.

**JESU, LOVER OF MY SOUL (2).**

Other refuge have I none,  
Hangs my helpless soul on Thee;  
Leave, ah! leave me not alone,  
Still support and comfort me.  
All my trust on Thee is stayed,  
All my help from Thee I bring;  
Cover my defenceless head  
With the shadow of Thy wing.



**JESU, LOVER OF MY SOUL (3).**

Plenteous grace with Thee is found,  
Grace to cleanse from every sin;  
Let the healing streams abound,  
Make and keep me pure within.  
Thou of life the fountain art,  
Freely let me take of Thee;  
Spring Thou up within my heart;  
Rise to all eternity.

**JESU, LOVER OF MY SOUL (3).**

Plenteous grace with Thee is found,  
Grace to cleanse from every sin;  
Let the healing streams abound,  
Make and keep me pure within.  
Thou of life the fountain art,  
Freely let me take of Thee;  
Spring Thou up within my heart;  
Rise to all eternity.



**LEAD KINDLY LIGHT (3).**

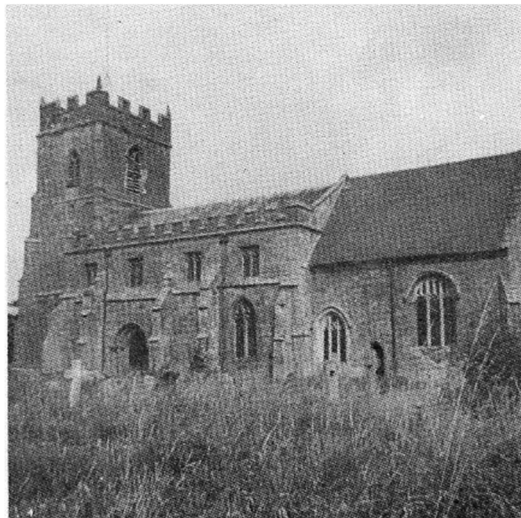
So long Thy power hast blest me  
Sure it still will lead me on.  
O'er moor and fen, o'er crag and torrent  
Till the night is gone.  
And with the morn those angel faces smile,  
Which I have loved long since and lost awhile.

**LEAD KLINDLY LIGHT (3).**

So long Thy power hast blest me  
Sure it still will lead me on.  
O'er moor and fen, o'er crag and torrent  
Till the night is gone.  
And with the morn those angel faces smile,  
Which I have loved long since and lost  
awhile.



UPSTAIRS BEDROOM WHERE I WAS  
BORN,  
MAY 8, 1902, EDGEHILL, ENGLAND.  
I LIVED HERE UNTIL I WAS  
FOURTEEN.



CHURCH I ATTENDED WHEN I WAS  
A BOY  
RADWAY, ENGLAND.

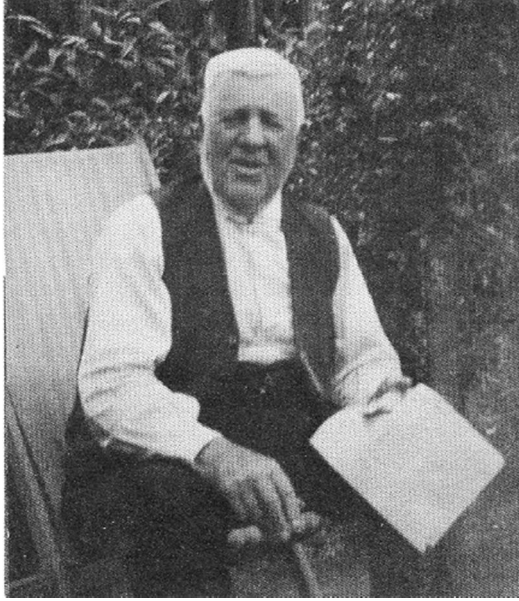


GRANDFATHER AND  
GRANDMOTHER COLLETT  
IN FRONT OF THEIR HOME IN  
ODDINGTON  
ENGLAND.

MY GRANDFATHER WAS  
CUSTODIAN OF  
PROPERTY IN THE COLLEGE AT  
OXFORD  
FOR MANY YEARS .

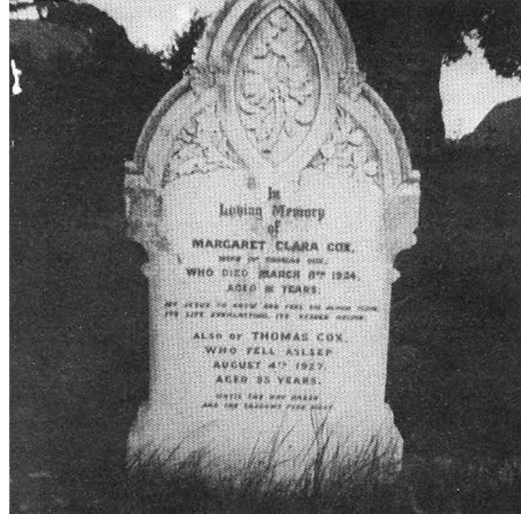


MY FATHER PRAYING FOR RAIN  
FOR HIS CROPS.



GRANDFATHER COLLETT

WE LOVED ONE ANOTHER VERY  
MUCH;  
HE GAVE ME ADVICE WHEN I CAME  
TO AMERICA.  
HE TOLD ME TO READ MY BIBLE  
EVERY DAY  
AND I WOULD NEVER GO WRONG.



MY GRANDPARENTS GRAVE; MY  
GRANDFATHER COX PASTORED THE  
SAME  
CHURCH FOR SIXTY THREE YEARS.

## 19.

### LANDING IN NEW YORK.

I was seventeen when the War ended. I then started preparing myself for the journey to the Mission Field. I left England in September, 1920 and landed in New York on October 23, 1920 on the beautiful passenger ship, The "AQUATANIA". The ship had been packed. I carried with me the necessary papers; My Mother's birth certificate, my own birth certificate and a letter of recommendation pertaining to Character and Background from the American Consul.

Many had to go to Ellis Island at that time. The Immigration Officer called me out from the crowd and said to me: "Young Man, We Want To Talk To You."

I had changed my passage on the ship from Third Class to First Class. I threw all my old, baggy suits overboard; bought new ones from the ship's tailor and had dressed up myself like

a Gentleman. My Grandfather had told me: "The First Outward Appearance Of Any Man And How He Is Dressed Makes A Big Difference." And He was right, It really did. I was through Immigration in less than Fifteen Minutes, then made arrangements to go to the United States Court the next day. I kept my appointment.

The Judge I faced was from Alabama and He was a Christian. He was really nice to me. I held up my right hand and Swore Allegiance to the United States of America. The Laws were different then; This was before anyone had to have First and Second Papers.

I remember the trip afterwards across the United States by Train. I spent a short time in Hollywood; then went to Las Vegas, Nevada working every day for the Los Angeles and Salt Lake Railroad and going to night school to further my education. After the Great Lay-off by the Railroads during the Administration of Harding, I went on the Dodge Brother's Yacht, going around the world, studying and learning all the way. And truly, that was a real schooling for me, learning and preparing myself to become the Man GOD wanted me to be.

"Go Ye Therefore, And Teach All Nations, Baptising Them In The Name Of The Father, And Of The Son, And Of The Holy Ghost; Teaching Them To Observe all Things What So Ever I Have Commanded You: And, Lo, I Am With You Always, Even Unto The End Of The World. Amen." Mathew 28:19 and 20. "And They Were All Filled With The Holy Ghost, And Began To Speak With Other Tongues, As The Spirit Gave Them Utterance." Acts 2:4.

The Missionary Field of the Great Amazon Basin is a vast Territory; Jungles, Villages and many Primitive Areas. I Walked these Jungle Trails of the Hinterland telling many souls about Jesus. Heaven was always on my mind.

"It Is Not Expedient For Me Doubtless To Glory. I Will Come To Visions And Revelations Of The Lord. I Knew A Man In Christ Above Fourteen Years Ago, (Whether In The Body, I Cannot Tell; Or Whether Out Of The Body, I Cannot Tell: GOD Knoweth;) Such An One Caught Up To The Third Heaven." 2 Corinthians 12:1 and 2.

I remember the Sunday I received The Baptism of the Holy Ghost, speaking in tongues as the Spirit gave me utterance. It was in a large tent meeting and Johnny McConnel was the Preacher; He was from Texas. I worked with Smith Wigglesworth while He was praying for the sick and I knew Aimee Semple McPherson very well. She was a precious soul; She won many souls into the Kingdom of GOD. Billy Black and many of the other Ministers and Evangelists were my friends. The Experience of the Baptism of the Holy Ghost that Sunday equipped me to work with some of these Women and Men of GOD.

"And The Things That Thou Hast Heard Of Me Among Many Witnesses, The Same Commit Thou To Faithful Men, Who Shall Be Able To Teach Others Also. Thou Therefore Endure Hardness, As A Good Soldier Of Jesus Christ." 2 Timothy 2: 2 and 3.

It was my desire to prepare myself to be a good Servant of the Lord. I went through many hard times and I suffered many things. But, today I count it all joy; For I am now Living in the Day of Victory in my Life. Heaven is on my mind. I have been there.

If you can try to imagine in your mind the Distance between New York and Los Angeles, or let us say, the Distance between New York and Peking, China or maybe Bombay, India. The Lord may let you understand a little how vast Heaven is. The Gigantic size of Heaven, Eighty

Times Bigger than the Whole Earth, with over Two Million Miles around it, creates a Gigantic

area on the inside through the Inner Gates and before the Throne of GOD. Can you imagine standing before The Throne of GOD and looking upon His Great Throne and then try to imagine yourself standing on the East Coast of the American shores and the Golden Altar farther away than Peking, China. Yet, you can see it in Heaven. Look to your right as you stand inside the Gate. There is the Great Temple holding Millions, The City Foursquare standing beside it. And then look to the left and there is the Banqueting House where Millions can eat at one time.

"He Brought Me To The Banqueting House, And His Banner Over Me Was Love." The Song of Solomon 2:4. "This Is My Commandment, That Ye Love One Another, As I Have Loved You." John 15:12.

Try and visualize in your Earthly Mind the River of Life and then the Mansions and the wonderful things that GOD has created in Heaven, where you and I will live forever. This is where a Bond of Peace and Love is established between Christian and Christian that will last all through Eternity where there is no end. This Earth is going to pass away and there will be a new Earth, a PERFECT PLACE, where no Adam will fall. After the Rapture, this Old Earth will be a bad place to be, for in Thessalonians we read about the Dead in Christ Rising First, and we that remain will be caught up to meet the Lord in the Air.

Truly, Christian Friends, this will be a Terrible Place to be after that. For those who will not go up in the Rapture, will be crying for the Mountains and the Rocks to fall on them. There is going to be a Great Explosion. It will Rock and Shake; It will Shake the Dead right out of the Earth; For the ground will give up the Dead.

"And I Saw A New Heaven, And A New Earth: For The First Heaven And The First Earth Were Passed Away; And There Was No More Sea." Revelation 21:1.

The Heavenly Flood Gates will open and there will be a Great Rocking and Reeling of the Earth, Shaking and Moving by the Spirit of the Living GOD until It will almost rock out of its Axis. this is the time when every tongue shall confess and every knee shall bow and say that Jesus Christ is Lord, the Man of Galilee, the One Who gave His Life on Calvary and Shed His Blood that we might have Life in Heaven and Have it more Abundantly.

"I Have Sworn By Myself, The Word Is Gone Out Of My Mouth In Righteousness, And Shall Not Return, That Unto Me Every Knee Shall Bow, Every Tongue Shall Swear." Book of Isaiah 45:23.

This message must be carried to all corners of the Earth. We are expecting, and it is my desire, to translate this message of Heaven into every language. Put it on tapes and ship these tapes to every Nation under Heaven. Many People of different Nationalities are crying to know about Heaven. These tapes will carry the Message of Jesus; They will tell about Heaven. Pray, Pray and Pray! And this will come to pass.

"But In Every Nation He That Feareth Him, And Worketh Righteousness, Is Accepted With Him. The Word Which GOD Sent Unto The Children Of Israel, Preaching Peace By Jesus Christ: (He Is Lord Of All:) That Word, I Say, Ye Know, Which Was Published Throughout All Judaea, And Began From Galilee, After The Baptism Which John Preached."



Acts 10:35, 36 and 37.

## 20.

### MY FIRST PASTOR.

I was discharged out of the American Service in the early part of 1923 and I decided that I would go to Alaska. I got a job with an American Logging Company, the name of the Logging Master was Bergman Eng. He was born of Norwegian parents in Minnesota. I took the job because it paid well and I wanted to get my body healthy and strong by working in the woods.

I was, also, studying at the time: Medical Books, Mechanical Books and several books of Geography or various countries. Being a lover of History, I had many History Books, too.

The books that I took to the logging camp weighed over one hundred fifty pounds along with Bibles. I sailed from Seattle, Washington, stopped in Vancouver, British Columbia, Canada for a few days while boat was being reloaded with supplies for logging camps.

After leaving Vancouver for the logging camp area, we stopped three or four days at a place called Ocean Falls in Prince Rupert. We sailed on up to an Inlet that divided Canada and Alaska. The logging operation was on the Alaskan side.

It was a big operation; Steam Donkey Engines, High Climbers and Men called Hook Tenders who were in charge of each crew. I equipped myself with Cork Boots, Tin Pants and Coat. The underwear I wore was made of so called Sixteen Ounce French Wool because the weather was so cold. This was the only way that you could keep warm. I enjoyed the outdoor life, went hunting and fishing a lot.

We were a lot of hungry workers, many times eating a second big steak in the place of Dessert. The chief cook was a German woman who really knew how to put on a big feed three times a day. I worked long enough to get what you called a money stake in order to use it to go back to school.

After my contract was up, I decided to stay in Vancouver because I had an uncle living there. I thought that it would be nice to visit him for awhile. During this stay in Vancouver I met a Gentleman, Charles O. Benham, who was a teacher of the Word of GOD. I attended the Bible School and sat under Brother Benham's teaching. I learned a lot about the Word of GOD.

I was A Christian previous to this visit to Vancouver, what you might call a Nominal Christian, believing every Word of the Lord in the Bible, but not practicing it fully. I attended Services regularly, Sunday morning and Sunday night, Tuesday night and Saturday night.

There was a sign on the platform in the Church where Brother Benham was the Pastor; It said in bold letters: JESUS IS COMING SOON. Another Scripture I remembered was: A DAY IS AS A THOUSAND YEARS WITH THE LORD. Another Scripture in my mind was: WITHOUT HOLINESS NO MAN SHALL SEE THE LORD.

The prayer meetings were wonderful; The travail before the Altar for souls was very spiritual. Many of the young people around me would Speak in Tongues, something that I knew nothing about. I was told by the Pastor that I needed the Baptism of the Holy Ghost and the Baptism of Fire. I remembered how my Grandfather, when I was a little boy, would speak out in a voice that sounded like French to me. So, I asked Pastor Benham if that was the same Bible experience that I thought to be French when I heard my Grandfather speak it. Brother Benham told me that my Grandfather must have had the Baptism of the Holy Ghost.

Brother Benham and I became very close friends; we would go out to eat together, pray together and talk a lot about the Lord Jesus. Brother Benham announced from the Pulpit that an Evangelist was coming from Texas to preach in a tent in the city. A very large tent was put up, Springtime had come.

The weather was just right for a tent meeting. Lots of sawdust was put on the floor; A large platform was built with a big prayer space behind the platform.

The First Sunday morning in the tent meeting I was told to go behind the platform and pray for the Baptism of the Holy Ghost. I was dressed up in a fine silk suit and a fine silk shirt with a turn-down linen collar, a four-in-hand tie, Patent Leather Shoes with buttons on the side, including silk socks. All the girls were trying to make dates with me. However, my Pastor would not allow such a thing; Instead, He said to spend time seeking the Lord.

He said, "When You Get The Baptism Of The Holy Ghost, You Be Sure And Get A Girl Baptized With The Holy Ghost And Then You Will Have No Problem." How well I remember the Infilling with the Baptism of the Holy Ghost. There was a Lummi Tribe Indian Woman praying on one side of me and a Missionary from the Belgium Congo named Sullivan on the other side. I know that I received the Baptism according to Acts 2:4 because I could not speak in English for several days.

After several months Pastor Benham decided to return to the United States, And I decided at this time to move back to the United States, also. I had all my Documents, Papers, Birth Certificate, and et cetera with me and anyway in those days there was no problem.

Brother Benham at thirty three married a girl eighteen in Eugene, Oregon. One of the other girls in the Church wanted me to take her on a date to eat ice cream, a malted milk, or such. Things were different in those days; I said that it wasn't proper for a girl to ask a young man for a date. And she replied, "OH, It Is Leap Year And So It Is Proper."

So, several of us went down to the ice cream parlor on the corner.

In 1925 I went up the Amazon River on a Missionary Journey at the Age of Twenty Three. For many years I have been preaching, doing Missionary Work and have been busy in



activities for the Lord; Preaching in Tent meetings, in Auditoriums, both here in the Homeland and in Foreign Countries.

While in a meeting in Gatlinburg, Tennessee in November 1984 with Norvel Hayes, Kenneth Copeland and other wonderful and outstanding Ministers, I met a Lady there whose name was Mrs. Benham and she was my First Pastor's Widow.

Sister Helen Benham was attending that same meeting, a seventy eight year old Lady; She was so happy and pleased to see me. I told Sister Benham that I had seen my First Pastor, Brother Benham, in Heaven. And what a happy person She was to hear that wonderful news that I had seen her beloved husband in Heaven. My Pastor, Brother Charles O. Benham from whom I learned so much over sixty years ago.



MY FIRST PASTOR,  
DR. AND MRS. CHARLES O. BENHAM

MY FIRST PASTOR 1921; IN LATER  
YEARS 1984, I HAD FELLOWSHIP WITH  
SISTER BENHAM IN A MEETING IN  
GATLINBURG, TENNESSEE DURING A  
CONVENTION.

## **21.**

### **BELLINGHAM MEETING**

The Communists attacked me at the End of World War Two.

GOD led me to Bellingham, Washington to have a Missionary Soul Saving Campaign. We began to have prayer meetings and we prayed for the sick in a small Upper Room over an old wooden building. The room packed out; It held about one hundred fifty people. Missionaries

came to attend the meeting, some from China, some from South America and other parts of the World.

The Power of GOD was present in the meetings and GOD really blessed. GOD Spoke to me to put up a Gigantic Tent. The area around Bellingham was wooded. We hired a company to clean the land with bulldozers which was very expensive.

We built a kitchen with walk-in ice box, big stoves and dish washing facilities. Right next to the kitchen we put up a tent with tables and chairs to feed the people because that is what the Lord told us to do.

After six weeks of working and preparing for a crowd which the Lord had told us would come, we were ready to start. The Lord had me Preach under the Anointing of the Holy Ghost and souls were being saved. I Preached several messages about about the Demons of Communism. Little did I know that this camp ground was right next to the Secretary of the Communist Party of the Northwest Territory. I was challenged by this man to take the tent down and leave the country or He would blow our entire camp ground and tent down with Dynamite.

After about one week of Services, The First Dynamite Blast went off. My Daughters, Ruthie and Margie, were small children, five and seven years old. Our oldest son was in the Service; Our two other sons were still at home, Teenagers.

Associated Press and the United Press came to see us and asked what this was all about. It did not take them long to find out that It was a Direct Communist attack against GOD's work. It has always been my desire to stand fast in the Liberty wherewith GOD has made us free and not be Entangled with a Yoke of Bondage.

I was invited one time by a United States Chaplain, Lieutenant Colonel Horton, to Preach in a Chapel full of Servicemen; Officers and Enlisted Men. I chose the Scripture as my text: "Stand Fast Therefore In The Liberty Wherewith Christ Hath Made Us Free, And Be Not Entangled Again With The Yoke Of Bondage." Galatians 5:1. We really had a wonderful time of fellowship, all of us together.

When I was challenged by the Communists, I felt that I was denied the Liberty to which I was entitled, to Preach the Gospel in the Name of Jesus. So, I stood fast and so did my family as well as my workers. We knew that we were in a battle, a battle and a challenge by Communism and the Devil.

I know when one is challenged by the Devil and His Evil Forces and His Satanic Powers, GOD will always come on your side and be with you all the way in a situation such as we were experiencing. I learned that in the Deep Jungles of the Missionary Field among the Satanic Powers there. And GOD has never let me down, even among the Witch doctors and the Headhunters, where many Missionaries have been Martyred.

With this experience in mind I Preached more powerful Sermons. These Communists could not understand the Love of GOD; They were so full of Satanic Power, ready to kill, destroy and murder. Our platform was large; WE had singers on the platform, ministers, Lummi Tribe Indians and myself. One Sunday night the Communists sneaked up very close to the platform and placed several sticks of Dynamite and then the explosion took place right at the end of the platform, lifting the platform up several feet. My wife was playing the piano and that piano was lifted clear into the Air. When the piano set down level again, my wife kept on playing

under the Power of the Holy Ghost. And over the loud speakers, I announced: "When You Communists Run Out Of Dynamite, We Still Will Be Here And Have Our GOD."

On the Monday morning the reporters came; One from the local Bellingham Paper, One from the Associated Press and from Pathe News. The Chief Reporter of the local paper said: "This Has Gone Far Enough, If They Can Do This To Your Group And Get By With It, Next Time They Will Attack Any Of Us Including My Church, I Am A Catholic." The Military Paper, The Stars and Stripes, had a reporter there, also.

On Tuesday, the Highways were choked with Automobiles from twenty miles all around Bellingham to come to the meeting. And yet, the Communists were still blasting away with their Dynamite. And Not One Christian ran. In less than a month, the Communist leader fell dead with a heart attack. And that was the end of the Communist challenge.

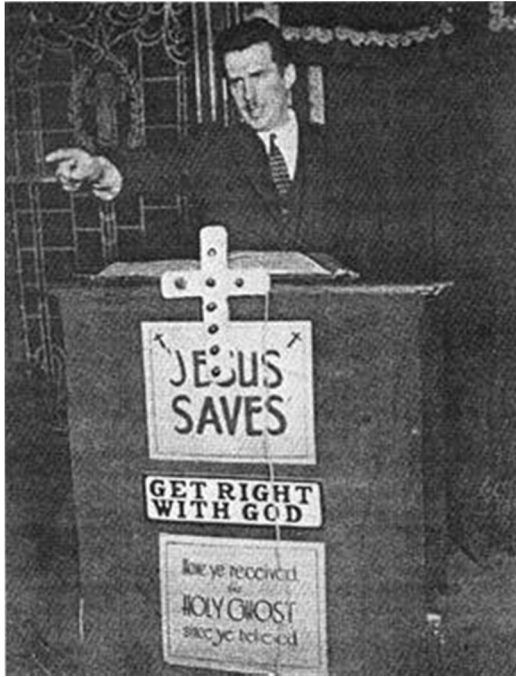
Many miracles took place, many souls were saved and GOD kept on blessing in a miraculous way even if they did call me, "THE WHITE SHOES PREACHER".

Aeroplanes flew overhead to take pictures of the whole Godly operation of the meeting.

LET'S STAND FAST IN OUR LIBERTY WHERE  
WITH CHRIST HAS MADE US FREE!



DR. COLLETT 1945.



DR. COLLETT PREACHING THE  
GOSPEL  
FIFTY FIVE YEARS AGO.



DR AND MRS COLLETT, BABY  
MARGARET,  
1936

LITTLE MARGIE SAT ON THE  
PIANO BENCH WITH HER MOTHER;  
SHE NOW PASTORS A GOSPELL CHURCH  
IN COLUMBUS, OHIO.



DR. COLLETT AND FAMILY IN HIS  
EARLY PREACHING DAYS PREPARING TO  
GO TO THE MISSION FIELD.



DR COLLETT BAPTISING IN THIS RIVER NEW CONVERTS  
WHO HAD JUST ACCEPTED THE LORD JESUS CHRIST  
AS THEIR SAVIOUR



MRS. COLLETT 1925.



"MRS. COLLETT AT THE ORGAN.

"OAKHILL TELEVISION STATION, OAKHILL,  
WEST VIRGINIA, DR. COLLETT WAS ONE  
OF THE FIRST TO USE TELEVISION  
TO PREACH THE GOSPEL.

## **22.**

### **THE BIG TOP**

We put the tent up in two places in Ohio, Portsmouth and Columbus and several places in West Virginia.

The Kenova, West Virginia Meeting was Gigantic; Thousands of people came from the time the meeting started until the finish. We must have spoken to at least three hundred thousand people during that meeting. Each night, droves would come from the mountains and the cities around that area.

One ambulance brought a lady all the way from Delaware. Ambulances came from all directions bringing the sick and the afflicted and even the Dead. Thousands accepted the Lord Jesus Christ as their Saviour.

The Highway was jammed and a West Virginia State Patrolman left his Patrol car in the middle of the highway with his radio going, running down to the tent, thinking something

special had happened or perhaps an accident had taken place. It was the Dead Woman coming back to life.

The local Assembly of God Pastor came early one night and asked to see me, I only talked to him about a half of a minute and he said, "Look At Them Coming. They Are Coming In By Drove." Hundreds of cars surrounded his car and he could not drive out until the meeting was over because he had parked his car close to the tent ropes. He had intended to stay only a few minutes, but then he had to stay during the whole service.

When he did not show up for his own Church Service at his regular seven o'clock appearance time, his congregation began to wonder where their Minister was. One of the congregation announced in the Church that he had seen his car at the tent meeting. That was all it took. The whole congregation came swarming into the meeting; The place was packed with no seats left and his congregation stood up outside the tent with the rest of the spectators peeking over heads.

It was quite common for Church buses to go back and get two or three loads; Baptists, Methodists, Lutherans and Pentecostals, all coming together to see the Power of GOD in Action.

It was quite a sight to see rows of deaf people one after the other receiving their hearing. The blind receiving their sight, the lame made to walk, just exactly as Jesus had told the Disciples of John The Baptist to watch and see.

One woman was so excited in the Prayer Room leading a soul to Jesus that when so much of the Power came upon him and his voice began to flow out in other tongues as the Spirit gave him utterance, she said: "Stop It, Stop It, Our Church Does Not Believe In That." But, that new convert could not stop even though he was a close relative of the lady and had attended her Church regularly sitting in the Amen Corner for years.

When the Power of GOD really comes into the Midst of a Group, no man can stop it. When the River of Life will burst its banks coming out of Heaven and will saturate the Earth with the Power of GOD and the Great Spiritual Explosion takes place all around the world, no man-made organization, whether Godly or Worldly, will have any power to stop the Glory of GOD.

When the Spirit of GOD circles the Earth, there will be just so long a time to get ready to repent, be filled with the Spirit of GOD and learn to speak GOD's language in Heaven down here on this Earth.

If you are saved and washed in His Blood, you will have to go into the Outer Perimeter of Heaven a Thousand Years in order to be able to speak to GOD The Father because inside of Heaven only GOD's Language is spoken. Now, GOD speaks to anyone in their own language and He answers the prayer uttered in any language or Dialect, or any tongue spoken. Jesus spoke out of Heaven to Paul in the Hebrew Tongue.

In Heaven Jesus and His Father spoke together in the Heavenly Language. You can learn it here on this Earth if you want to do so. It would be a whole lot easier than staying in Paradise a Thousand Years; For a day is as a Thousand Years with the Lord.

Down by the River Bottom where it was cool in the hot summer time, where copper heads crawled and people fished. We put up the Big Top again in Portsmouth, Ohio. The night of

the opening of the meeting big crowds came again, Healings were happening all over the place, Souls were getting saved by the Hundreds, Blind Eyes were opened up, Deaf Ears were opening, the Lame was walking and the Poor was having the Gospel preached to them and the Drunkards were getting delivered.

Little did we know that we had placed the tent right square on the top of the Drunkards' Retreat of that town. One night a man threw a wine bottle at me. I caught it in my hand; He threw another bottle and I caught that one, too. Three days afterwards he gave his heart to the Lord and was delivered of his drinking. He got a job which made his wife and children happy and two weeks after that, He received the Baptism of the Holy Ghost and spoke in tongues as the Spirit gave utterance.

Many Whiskey Drinkers and Beer Guzzlers got saved, even those who had been drinking Denatured Alcohol.

A Copperhead raised its ugly head like the Devil Himself and an old Gentleman, Reverend Coddell, picked up that Copperhead by the tail and threw him out amongst a bunch of sinners and scoffers; They really scattered then and more than half of them came running into the tent for protection. It was wonderful to see the Miracles take place. I believe the way GOD works in the Spectacular Best is the time when the Devil puts up a real challenge opposing the work of GOD; That is the time when GOD comes on the scene to work with you and to bless His Own.

A Church of Christ preacher brought in a cripple. With a sarcastic voice, he said: "Now, If Miracles Are For Today, Heal That Man In The Wheel Chair." I just said: "Jesus." I touched him with my finger. That man then went running around the tent three or four times shouting, "Jesus has healed me." And this closed the preacher's mouth, no other words were needed. This was much better than a debate. That is what he had come for, challenge me to a debate. But, I never heard his voice, nor did I see him again.

T. L. Osborne and Daisy had just returned from overseas somewhere and He announced that GOD was going to give Him this type of Ministry. Brother and Sister Osborne went to Tulsa, Oklahoma and started a work in Brother Warren Shibley's home. A precious Brother in the Lord. Their Ministry grew so big that he went back to the Mission Field drawing in Thousands and Thousands of people, feeding the poor, preaching to many Nationalities. With the Power of GOD on your side, you can do anything. There is no failure with GOD!

We moved from Portsmouth, Ohio to Columbus, Ohio. It was the same again. The Power of GOD moved, souls were saved and many Miracles took place. We put the Big Top up in Charleston, West Virginia, Oak Hill, West Virginia and Beckley, West Virginia.

It was North, South, East and West from the Borders of Canada to the Borders of Mexico; From the Pacific Ocean to the Atlantic Ocean, Overseas to the Jungles and to the Mountains, and to the Islands of the Sea, from Cairo, Egypt across the Red Sea among the Arabs and the Blacks of Africa; GOD has moved in every meeting.

Now, after spending Five and One Half Days in Heaven, GOD is rewarding me for Faithfulness. Heaven is indeed a beautiful place. Thousands of souls that have been won to Jesus have gone into Heaven to enjoy the Glories there and waiting for their Bodies to come out of their Graves.





"THE OLD DAYS OF RADIO.

DR. COLLETT PREACHING THE  
WORD ON  
RADIO, 1950.



DR. COLLETT AND DAUGHTERS,  
MARGIE AND RUTHIE.



AT THE OAKHILL, WEST VIRGINIA  
TELEVISION STATION IN THE EARLY  
DAYS OF TELEVISION.



THE COLLETT FAMILY.



MARGIE, TOM, MRS. COLLETT AND RUTHIE.



SON, FRED, CONTRACTOR AND BUILDER, LIVES IN XENIA, OHIO.



DR. AND MRS. COLLETT 1960.



FRED DURING HIS MISSIONARY DAYS IN WEST AFRICA; HIS TRUCK GOT STUCK IN THE MUD.



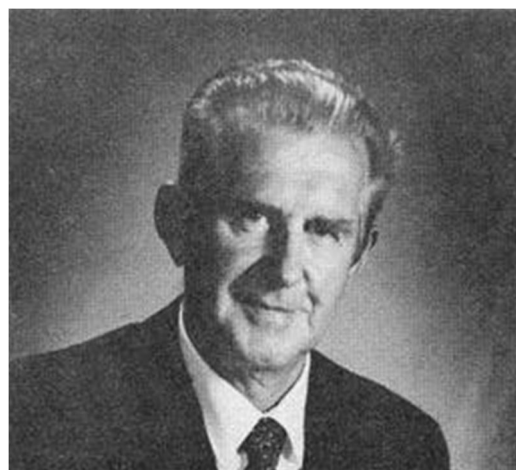
BOB COLLETT IN KOREA.



SOME OF THE COLLETT  
GRANDCHILDREN.



DR. COLLETT, KEY WEST, FLORIDA  
1961.



DR. COLLETT, 1960.



MY FATHER, BROTHERS, SISTERS,  
MRS. COLLETT  
AND FAMILY FRIENDS IN 1960.



MY FATHER, MY BROTHER ON  
RIGHT,  
NEPHEW LEFT AND GREAT-GRAND-  
NIECE, SUSAN.



FAMOUS ROUNDHOUSE FORTRESS  
USED IN BATTLE OF EDGEHILL,  
ENGLAND, 1642.



MY FATHER, ALBERT JOHN  
COLLETT,  
AND MRS. COLLETT.

## **PART III: SECTION DIVIDE**

### **My Journeys Among The Indians In South America.**

#### **23.**

#### **THE INDIAN AND THE AMAZON.**

The Amazon Basin is known, also, as the Green Hell for many explorers and Missionaries and others have given their Lives by Exhaustion, Malaria, Diseases and Killings; It all makes this area unusual. From sunshine to rain, daylight to dark, the Traveller is still excited by the Atmosphere. The Loneliness of the Interior will make you think within your Heart and Soul that a Supreme Being must have have had a hand in it all.

Among all this loneliness are the beautiful Flowers, the gorgeous Trees and Plants of all kinds that would make a Nurseryman's Heart jump with joy to see it all. Orchids by the Thousands, Water Lilies ten feet across them, Vines of Flowers hanging from trees with Thousands of Blooms glistening through the sunlight filtering through the trees.

All this will make one stand in awe and gaze in wonder at this great sight.

The Indians that originally numbered in the millions became an easy prey to the cruelty and greed of the early Conqueror. The first Settlers were greeted by the Indians, given provisions and helped in many ways. The use of weapons to kill Indians made them very dangerous and unfriendly .

The Pueblo Indians have penetrated into all walks of life and today they have a part in Business, in Churches and in Governments. There are millions of mixed breed, predominately with Aboriginal Blood. There are two types of Indians living in the Amazon Basin today, the Ancient and the Modern.

In the past, the way of life among the mixed Indians was enough to eat and drink, sex and the production of children. Today, there is a tremendous change for "the mixed people. It is common to see pretty girls with the beautiful Bodies of the Indian with Blue Eyes and Blond Hair. And Red Heads with Auburn Hair mixed hanging in Curly Locks down their backs and some with deep Brown Eyes and Bodies of all Shades and Colors.

There are two types of Indians back in the Interior away from the Amazon. The very Primitive who through Demoralization became Sadists once had a Civilization of their own and then there are the Indians with a very high Moral Thinking, who have not been touched by Western culture and who in their Tribal Laws advocate Death if Sex is used other than for Reproducing or with another one's partner.

Then, there are the sick and afflicted Indians whose life span is less than Thirty Years, their Bodies being afflicted with Jungle Rot, Parasites and Leprosy. With all these differences in health and customs many of the Tribes are strangers to one another. Going back into the Interior among the various Tribes of Indians, you can realize the great variety. However, all of them have one thing in common; To hunt, fish and live off the land. I had traveled in an Indian canoe with one of the Tribes to the Head Waters of the River. I walked with them then for several days into the Interior, there these Nomad Indians were living in a large encampment.

There were about Thirty Huts in all, A thatch-type building on clay ground about Thirty feet long and Twenty feet wide. Each end of this Hut was open to create a draft.

These Huts were built directly on the ground, much different from the ones that are built on stilts. As it is the custom of many Tribes, the men and women separate themselves at night and place the children in the center and have no relations between them during their sleeping hours.

My first experience with this kind of Tribe as to learning the Indian way of life and their reproduction came at this time. I discovered after living with these Indians awhile that there was a certain time for this. It was a time during the Hunting and Fishing to get provisions when this took place.

After several days of preparations, we started on a hunting trip. I, also, learned that there was a fruit in the Jungle in which the women were very much interested. And by eating of this fruit, the women would become pregnant and have strong babies.

A hunting trip has to last until the woman is sure that she is pregnant and a baby is certainly on the way. If it is a boy, he must become a hunter. And if it is a girl, she must labor for the Tribe, get married and produce more children.

After traveling for several days on Jungle trails and crossing rivers and climbing up steep hills and coming into deep valleys hunting as we went and obtaining our daily food from the Jungles such as frogs, fish and birds. We came across a large cluster of trees loaded with fruit. The women prepared our meal as usual, in a very primitive way, cooking on open fires and boiling in clay pots.

The women ate none of it, though, instead they ate of the fruit on that large cluster of trees and the shoots and vegetables of the Jungles. The custom was that by eating the fruit of those particular trees, she would become pregnant much sooner. This same fruit was been analyzed and the drug in it does cause conception.

They gathered around the tree almost as in divine reverence as they began to gather the fruit. Their faces portrayed sincerity and a belief in the order and tradition of the Tribe. That faith in that tree is what this Tribe had known always. As they began to eat, they rubbed their breasts, their bodies and their stomachs. Each one would massage the other. This was supposed to make the fruit have quicker action.

Their one purpose in coming to this place was to be fruitful to their men. The ones whom they adored, the ones in whom they had faith and the ones to whom they would be servant. For it is the custom for the wife to wait on her man, to please him as he is her hunter. They would

hand him his dart already poisoned, keep his hunting gear clean and wash and bathe him like a baby.

Each day the men would proceed out from this area, bring the food in to camp. And there were double hammocks made; The men and women were now sleeping together. But as soon as the sun went down, they would immediately separate and go to single hammocks. As the reproductive period is taking place, the men and women sing their own religious songs, for this is a very sacred time for the only purpose of the sexual contact was to replenish the Tribe and not for pleasure. There was certainly no animal type action to this as it was carried on within the Laws and the Customs of the Tribe. A very unusual thing happened; There were no barren women and every man was quite proud of his responsibility for reproduction of the Tribe.

And then the return journey started. During the time of pregnancy the woman does not go near the man. When the Baby is about to be born, the woman prepares for herself a hammock by the river. In the bottom of the hammock a hole is left. And when the first pains are felt, the woman climbs into the hammock, and with the rhythm and relaxation of the hammock swinging back and forward, the baby is born. The woman cuts the cord, washes the baby, cleans herself and carries the baby back into the camp and presents the baby to her husband who is quite proud to see his offspring. If it is a male child, He must become a hunter. He is taught to hunt by his father. He teaches him to use a knife and how to throw it, to use the bow and shoot an arrow, to gig fish and to use the blowgun with the poisonous darts.

After several years of this kind of training, He is sent out into the Jungles alone. He must bring back so many paws of wild animals and meat for supplies. He will stay in the Jungles by himself until He has accomplished this. To come back without his prey would be disgraced and thrown out of the Tribe to die alone after his body has been disfigured and burned by hot rocks.

That way He is known and marked for life. I have never seen this happen, but it must be a terrible feeling. So, naturally, the young hunter will stay in the Jungle until He gets his quota of animal paws and meat. And then there is a great time of celebration when he is taken into the Tribe as a full-fledged hunter. His body is marked, the face is crossed with a type of cross. The sign of the hunter is inscribed upon his chest and upon his back is put the sign of the Tribe. This is why it is very hard to get in among some of these Tribes and be accepted by them.

It is hard to go among the Tribes with a party or a Safari. The only one that they may eventually accept is one person traveling alone. There was a German explorer who went with his wife and young baby among the Javaries. They captured the baby and killed the Mother and Father.

The explorer's brother lived in Manaus, Brazil and He often wondered what had become of his brother. Everyone thought that all three, the Father, Mother and baby had been killed. Eighteen years later back in the Interior by the Yavari River, this young girl was found, the baby who had been captured now a grown woman. She was perfectly satisfied to stay with the Tribe; She knew nothing beside life with the Indians. She was wearing animal skin clothing and was actually enjoying the status of a Queen in the Tribe. Her uncle left Manaus and

journeyed into the jungles to see his niece. However, he could not convince her to leave the Tribe. And as far as I know, she is still with them to this day.

Some Missionaries had penetrated this area and had made friends with some of the Indians. They then told the Missionaries the whole story of the capture of the girl.

## 24.

### **THE SADISTS OF THE INTERIOR.**

Going up the Yavari River on a Thirteen Day Journey by Boat, We were told about a Tribe of Indians who lived about Fifty Kilometers back from the river and who were Drug Users and practiced Sadist Actions.

Our party consisted of the Commissioner for Peru of the Amazon Region, a Kafani Indian, an American from Cuba by the name of McCoy, a Peruvian Policeman, Two other Indians from another Tribe and myself.

After traveling into the Interior for several days, We left our quite large boat on the river and proceeded on foot. Our boat had rubber sides built on it to protect us from the poisonous darts from the Indian Tribes we passed.

Finally, we came to an abandoned Indian Village, still looking for this Tribe of Drug Users. Leaving the abandoned Village, we traveled several more days through the Swamps and crossing rivers, following our Indian Guide to search out the Sadists and visit with them.

It was almost sundown when we heard a Blood Curdling Noise in the distance. Our Indian Guide, who spoke Spanish, told us that we were nearing the Village of the Sadists.

We did not know whether we would encounter a vicious or a friendly people. It so happened we arrived right in the middle of one of their Feasts and Ceremonies. It had become dark and the moon came up very bright. You could very clearly see the people moving about and see some lying on the ground.

We decided to make camp for the night as our guide told us that they would be so full of Drugs, the Indians would not attack us. We understood, after studying this Tribe, that they had once belonged to a very Moral Tribe and had practiced a family life in good order. But, through the use of Drugs, with its influence, they had left their main Tribe and gathered followers out of over Thirty other Tribes and had come into this area to grow Drugs and develop them to practice Sadism.

This group was so under the influence of the Drugs, they had become helpless in their actions as far as having any power to attack us. There were several hundred of them: Men, Women and Children.

We soon learned that their ways of demonstrating their love for one another was through cruel action and torture. It was a horrible sight to see the men torturing the women and the women



torturing the men. After some of them would die through overdose of Drugs and actual torture of one another, these people would crawl away from the Dead bodies leaving them to be devoured by the wild animals.

We were able to walk among them and see first hand exactly what was going on and what effect the Drugs were having over these

people. There were several grouped around a pot that was hung over a fire. Roots were being placed into this pot and boiled. And all of them would drink from the pot as soon as the substance became cool enough to drink. They offered us some, but we didn't join in the drinking of the brew.

We noticed that they had all kinds of images of naked human beings in various sexual actions. You find these same kinds of relics in some of the homes and museums of South America. I believe that these relics had the same effect on them as the pornography and nude pictures do upon the brains and actions of many in America today. It is just another age we live in.

The mixture of these different Tribes of Indians have established among themselves a Drug-Using, Sadist-Practicing Society. They had all become Homosexuals, Lesbians and Sexual Perverts. In the study of these Indians, we found that more males were born to them than females - about five to one. These Drug Feasts would last from new moon to new moon. The Indians seemed to have been influenced by the moon through the years. And at the full moon, which it was at the time of our visit, it was the safest time for us to go there.

Our Indian Guide told us that we must as soon as the moon would wane because then their celebration would come to an end.

In a few days they would stop using Drugs and become very dangerous and would no doubt attempt to kill us.

The sight of these people lying in all kinds of positions, the men, women and children, was horrible. We watched several die through torture. They would twist one another's arms and legs and pull out hair, squeeze one another's throats, burn each other with hot sticks from the fires. It was almost too horrendous to watch. Some of the people who advocate that persons should try Marijuana should investigate and visit these people because they start out in the celebration by smoking Marijuana before going on to the more hard drugs.

In their gatherings and drug feasts there is absolutely no reasoning in their sex life. These people know their Jungle drugs. There is a drug that is taken from a fly. It is a greenish juice. This is placed in water and drunk in excess. This has a tremendous effect upon the organs of the body until they are with Satanic action. But, during these periods, the females do become pregnant. That is, if they are not killed in the action.

During these gatherings faces are bleeding, bodies are cut and some are left to die. Then, there is the drug that causes the individual to have great hallucinations, very much like the use of LSD. Along with several Doctors, I visited one of these Sadist Groups. Their Leader was able to speak Spanish and He explained the effects of the drug from the Juquanie Plant. This Plant, when boiled in water, has a good use as well as bad. When put on an open sore or a cut, it will readily kill the germs and has a great healing effect.

However, when swallowed, it causes the person to ride on clouds, swim over miles of water, push over trees and fight with animals and conquer them. It does, however, kill the parasites in the stomach.

But, the effect upon the human brain is very damaging and will cause death after a few years of use. The drug may only be taken for three or four days. But recurring of the effects of this drug will last for weeks.

These same Indians have drugs that cause pregnancy and some that will prevent pregnancy. And they have some drugs that will make the user simply intoxicated.

These drug users are very sickly looking, very weak in body and migrate very seldom into New Areas. They stay in small location, eat little food and just exist.

They start giving birth to babies at eleven and twelve years of age. The babies are very small at birth. The Adults reach a height of less than five feet. They become immune to some diseases such as Malaria and immune to some parasites because the drugs they take kill the parasite in their bodies.

They crave smoking very much using some weed much stronger than Marijuana. When they kill themselves with drugs, It is known among them as a happy ending. It is a terrible life while it lasts.

There is no difference between men and women in things like toiletry. The sex is open, without shame, for their brains cannot comprehend the action. The area where the Sadists live is far Inland from the great waters of the Amazon, you may encounter the Puma, the Ocelot of which there are six species. Also, there are different kinds of Deer and the Coati, the Tapir, the Ant Eater and a variety of Rodents. One variety is sheep size. The World's Largest Rodent. Bats without number haunt you at night. The dangerous Bushmaster is seven feet long and there is the Fer-de-lance which I have seen with a length of Twenty Five Feet and can swallow a small deer. Also, the Cayman, the Great Valley's Alligator which can switch its tail that can send you whirling. The Alligators hide themselves at the River's edge so trees are felled in order to cross the rivers.

The sense of smell is of great value to the Indian. They can identify almost anything around them by smell. Their sense of smell is so acute and developed that they can stop Dead on a Jungle Trail and call out and tell you what is close by.

Some of the rivers in South America contain the Freshwater, voraciously tooth Piranha about twelve inches long and is fatal to man and animal when encountered in a school. A feast of this fish makes a wonderful meal in the Jungles.

The Manatee or Seacow, a large, aquatic, Herbivorous Mammal is harmless and is man's best friend on the river. There are several species of Dolphins and they are master of all fish of the river.

The sharks, the Swordfish and the Sawfish, also, the tremendous Catfish weighing up to eight hundred pounds penetrate hundreds of miles up the great Amazon. But, I have great admiration for the Dolphin. One majestically escorted me to shore when our boat capsized, heavily loaded, in the middle of the river. Any animal of the Jungle, even the wild pigs, respect the Dolphin. The Dolphin is to my estimation the most clever of all fish of the great Amazon Basin.

There is, also, the Insect Kingdom, whose populations are in uncountable numbers and which inject poison into the Jungle Traveler. One British Naturalist collected eight thousand insect species in the Interior of the Amazon Basin.

Stinging Gnats, Mosquitoes innumerable including the Anopheles, haunt the interior river banks in clouds. Ants and Termites will eat shoes, shirts, socks, hats and even the Bible. I put my Jungle bag on a log and forgot to protect it by hanging it up. The next morning, all that was left of it was the metal. During the night three shirts, four suits or underwear, several pairs of socks and a whole pad of notes had been devoured.

Army ants eat other insects. The Big Jungle Rats eat the Lizards and the Snakes. The Great Amazon Basin was never conquered in the early invasion of the Orientals or the Spanish or the Portuguese.

However, today with modern machinery and insecticides, the Jungles are being penetrated and settled rapidly. The real true infiltration into the depth of the Great Amazon Basin among the Indians is by the Christian Missionary who has become like the Indian, living with them, listening to them and learning how to survive.

The determination with Christ in his or her heart to win these precious souls to Christ, is what has given the Missionary a desire to Sacrifice and live among them.

The most terrifying sight that I witnessed was a horde of *Denaponera Giganti*, the World's largest ant, whose jaws are so powerful they actually make large wounds in the flesh. There is the *Monstrous Titanus Giganteus*, a six inch beetle whose pinchers can slash a finger to the bone. Grasshoppers the size of sparrows and There is the Tarantula Fly which can sting through the clothing and deposits its eggs under the skin which causes open ulcers. The Spider Wasp with a two and one half inch body, a four inch wing spread packing a stinger one half inch long and carrying poisonous venom is rampant, too.

The Bees of the Amazon are stingless and swarm by the thousands to land a perspiring body. You knock them off, Immediately. Then, there are the tiny Midgets which can penetrate through the finest Mosquito netting. Caterpillars, a half foot long, can destroy anything around you in a few hours.

Yet, among all of this, there is the most wonderful beauty imaginative. The Butterflies maneuver around you with expert skill, loop the loop and put on a real demonstration for you.

In these three million square miles of Jungle territory, the mixed Indian Breeds cluster in the River Pueblos.

There are two hundred forty Tribes that have been penetrated by the Missionaries and they have at least thirty seven distinct languages.

The Indians have told me of the many terrible oppressions of the early Settlers who used discipline, physical punishment, torture and murder. In twelve years in one small area, seven thousand Indians were murdered.

So, in order to make a friend of the Indian among the isolated Tribes. You must go alone or with other Indians, carry no guns and become one of them. Once they have confidence in you and trust you, their trust is unshakable. The Indian of the Primitive has a sense that tells him whether you are his friend or not.

## 25.

### THE WORM EATING INDIANS.

While in the city of Manaus, Brazil, I was talking to a gentleman by the name of Kirk Gluck. Kirk had left Germany at the end of the war in order to escape the onslaught of trouble and had come to the United States under the name of Waggoner. After spending some time in New York, he hitchhiked to Canada and stayed there for awhile. Then finally, hitchhiking all through the western part of the United States and down through Central America, Panama and Colombia, Kirk Gluck came to the Ecuadorian Border on the Pan-American Highway. He ended up in Peru and married a Peruvian lady. He lived in Peru for a year and then came to Manaus, took back his rightful name of Kirk Gluck, received a German Passport and became a resident and citizen of Brazil.

Kirk has a lovely family and told me that he never killed anyone in the war, that He was a mechanic fixing trucks for Hitler's Blitzkrieg.

Kirk Gluck now takes Safaris into the Interior of the Great Amazon Basin. He was the one who first told me about some Indians living in the northern part of Brazil almost at the Venezuelan Border. He said that these Indians did not wash or bathe and ate worms for food.

I decided to visit these Indians. Kirk said that he had only gone to the outer perimeter where these Indians live and could see some of them in the distance.

After a few days of preparation, I decided to start on this Journey alone to go among these Indians. It is very common knowledge to the seasoned traveler in the Amazon Basin that if one goes alone to an Indian Tribe, he is not as apt to be killed than if he goes with a party. I had just read a report in a Brazilian Newspaper where a Catholic Priest along with several explorers were massacred by the Indians. Their bodies were found by the Military.

Some had their skulls cracked; Others had their heads severed. Kirk told me it would be very dangerous if we both went together. The Indians fear if more than one comes to them, feeling it is an invasion and an intrusion on their way of life.

I was able to obtain a ride on a Military Plane. The Military of Brazil is very friendly to the Missionaries cooperating in every way possible in the development and well-being of the Indians.

I was let off on an airstrip, not too far from the Venezuelan Border. The Pilot of the plane instructed me that when I was ready to leave to come back to the airstrip and light three fires in triangle shape. They would check the airstrip daily. I encountered some Indians that same afternoon. They seemed to be very friendly and not in any way hostile toward me. Three of them had blowguns in their hands and several of them were armed with bows and arrows. I walked among them on a Jungle Trail for about a mile. They were talking in Guarauno, and unclassified language. There are many unclassified Indian languages.

As the sun was going down, I found myself among about four or five hundred Indians, rather larger than most Tribes, with powerful muscles. The Indian women were not squatty, but quite tall and, also, muscular. Everyone was naked. Their bodies were the color of Blue Slate and their skin like Silk which glittered in the dark as if fluorescent.

They were so friendly and indicated I was to eat with them. The truth about going alone among the Indians, that it was more safe to do this, had been proven again. And it is better to take nothing with you. A camera is out of the question at first as the Indians can, mistakenly, think that it is some gadget to destroy or hurt them. The Indian women had gathered hundreds of worms or grubs out of the grass and from the leaves of trees. These worms look something like a caterpillar, only many times larger. They started to clean them by taking off the hairy fuzz. After this is done, the worm look something like an Oyster.

They were boiled in water along with spices and plantenos to thicken them; They tasted quite palatable and a little like an Oyster, but in this slippery sauce. I had not eaten anything since early morning which no doubt allowed me to think they were palatable, but it was necessary to chew them up good as the meat was gristly.

After eating this meal with the Indians, they took me about another mile in the dark to an area where the entire ground was on fire. The side of this mountain had been burning for a long time. It had left a slate colored ash. The Indians sat down in the ashes, rubbed themselves with the ashes all over their bodies. The operation was a type of cleanliness. With this Ash they removed the dirt and sweat from their bodies. The ground was quite warm which made you feel not so cold in the mountain Air so sleeping was comfortable in the warmth of the Ashes.

I learned that these Indians lived to be very old and that there was no disease among them such as Malaria, Tuberculosis, or Kidney trouble.

One Indian woman gave birth to a baby that night. The newborn baby was rubbed with ashes in the same way the adults used the ashes on themselves. This Tribe of Indians doesn't wash with water and yet they are very healthy. They have no cavities in their teeth and their hair on both the men and the women hangs down on their backs in a long black silken effect.

They go out hunting on the slopes of the mountain sides. And what animals they bring back are placed in the hot Ashes until the meat was done like a barbecue of jerked meat.

They had a drink which was made from a fruit about ten times the size of a grape. After being crushed into an earthen bowl, it was dipped into smaller bowls for drinking.

This Tribe of Indians did not gorge themselves with food. Not one of them had large stomachs. They were very active. They did not grow anything themselves such as vegetables, but depended wholly on worms, wild animals, herbs and fruits and shoots from the trees.

Like some of the other Tribes, the women would sleep down at one end in the Ashes on the ground and the men at the other end. The babies and children slept at the feet of both men and women.

I noticed one of the little boys about six years old was very strong and could pick up a very heavy weight. Their games consisted of expert wrestling between both men and women. The children would walk on their hands and stand on their heads, do push-ups, side sways, hop, skip and jump for hours without exhaustion. When one of the children would get out of line, instead of pulling them by the hand, the mothers would catch hold of their long black hair and pull them along on their bottoms until the little ones would say something to their mothers and then they would let them go. The pulling of hair did not seem to bother them very much. It was the pulling along on the rough rocks which seemed to disturb them.

After spending some time with these Indians, I came back to Manaus and found a Missionary from Coeur D'Alene, Idaho, who was praying that the Lord would make him a Missionary among these Indians. Missionary Wiley had never been married and had worked in the Jungles of South America for quite a few years. In His final prayer before leaving to minister to this Tribe, he said: "Dear Lord, Help Me Win These People For Jesus Christ. But, Please Don't Ask Me To Eat Worms."

After Missionary Wiley spent some time with these people, he learned to eat the worms and grubs just like the rest of the Tribe.

## 26.

### WORSHIP AMONG THE MACAMBAS

The Indians of the Amazon Basin, the high Andes Mountains and the Coastal Areas lived in these lands long before the European settlers came. There were Indian Groups who were very Religious hundreds of years previous to the appearance of any outsider.

They built great Temples, constructed buildings which amazed the Archaeologists and these are still being uncovered. The Sun Worshipers had a Divine Order; Many of the early Religious influences exist today among the Indians.

There are the Witch Doctors who obtain power through fear and believe in evil spirits and good spirits and they still have a great influence over some of the Tribes. Their dances and drum beating have not changed through the Ages. One of the Tribes that I know really well prayed to a Heavenly God long before the Missionaries went there.

The influence of the Catholic Church has been more predominant in the Villages and Cities that have been constructed by the early settlers than back in the Interior where many thousands of Indians live. The Catholic Church established numbers of congregations through South America, built beautiful buildings and was the prominent religious power until recent years.

A great revival of the Spirit has taken place. The Indians were always very spiritual. And it is no trouble to get an Indian to believe in a spirit.

The Catholic Church type of worship, believing in the Shed Blood of Jesus Christ, The Virgin Mary and the Power of the Priest to Officiate, established a tremendous control over the people. The Church penetrated into all walks of life, the Military, the Governments and the People.

The Catholic Missionaries came to South America to establish the religion of Spain and Portugal. Many of the early Catholic Priests gave their lives on the Mission Field. There was one stipulation and law set forth by the Catholic Church; That all commerce and business of

the early settlers should be taxed twenty percent. This is how many of the great Cathedrals of South America were built. These beautiful buildings stand today as a testimony of the genius and know-how of the early builders.

During all of this great invasion of the early settlers and the establishment of the Catholic Religion and the Killings of the Indians, many of the Tribes fled far into the Interior. And there, they have remained untouched and without contact with anyone else since that time except for the Missionaries. History tells us that several millions Indians were killed during the early invasion of the settlers.

This caused the Indians to mistrust the European, while in the earlier days of the European, it was not unusual for the Indian to stand in awe on the river banks and supply the early settlers with food and welcome them into their midst in trust. However, greed for wealth and domination executed in sometimes destruction for the Indian.

Many of the Europeans died in the struggle for domination of this great land. Spain, especially, had her part. This Spanish American Empire fell as other Empires have fallen.

Now, We have different Countries of South America, Brazil being the largest, settled and established by the Portuguese. Today, Brazil is forging forward with a cooperative plan of all its mixed races. Thousands of Indians still live there and the Indian Blood runs through the veins of many Brazilians to such an extent that it has become a Beautiful part of the Human Race.

The Indians living in the Interior have their various ways of Worship. One Tribe, the Macambas, has its own special style with primitive Indian and African mixture combined together.

During the week, you may see a flag flying by a river. This will give a message to the passer-by that there will be a Macamba Worship. This is a Ghastly sight to watch.

These services are held under large trees. Any kinds of animals or fowls such as chickens are carried up into the trees alive with their legs tied together and their heads hanging down.

After the setting of the sun, fires are lit around the encampment and the women begin to dance in writhing, Satanic movements. They twist their bodies into contortions sometimes while on their feet and sometimes when lying on the ground. After working themselves into a feverish pitch of some sort of spirit, men in the trees will cut the throats of the animals and chickens and let the hot blood run down on the dancers. The smell of this blood on hot perspiring bodies will make the dancers go into more satanic actions. The men will then begin to dance with the women until the whole demonstration of so-called spiritual power ends up in complete loss of strength and exhaustion at daylight. They, then, go to the river and bathe and return to their places of abode until the next time of worship is announced by the flying of the flag.

## **THE INFLUENCE OF RELIGIOUS BELIEFS**

The Witch Doctor with his power of influence over families will claim healing magic. One of the Mountain Tribes who still have their Witch Doctors, believe in them because some of their cures do work. Some of the Witch Doctors are handlers of Drugs and they use these Drugs for cures. Along with these Drugs, Symbols are used such as sticks, roots, leaves, bugs and elics made out of clay.

If a patient dies, a wife, a husband or any member of a family, the Witch Doctor will never say that his treatment has failed.

He will always claim: "There is a spirit in the midst that has caused the Death." And that spirit is in one of the members of the family. It could be a baby, or a grandmother, a sister or a brother, or a young girl. The Witch Doctor will look around at all the members of the family and choose the one who must die to appease this spirit.

And this way, the price will be paid. A large fire is made with wood that is full of a liquid that burns very fast and hot. After the fire reaches an intense heat, the one designated for death is thrown into the fire and burned alive to pay the debt.

This, naturally, gives the Witch Doctor power over life and death. Some Witch Doctors will have so many followers who will hunt and search out the enemy and pursue him until he is killed with poisonous darts. It is a great victory when one of these Witch Doctors is converted and will follow the teachings of Jesus Christ .

Demons and Devils and good spirits have been a part of the Indian life for hundreds of years. The Europeans brought with them, also, the belief in Devils and Demons which is one school of thought that the Europeans and the Indians had in common together.

The Indians believe that in their conversations to Christ all Demons and Devils leave them; For they really know their Demons and Devils. They call them by name and they are well acquainted with evil spirits.

One young girl in the explanation of her conversion testified like this: "I was entangled around my body with many creeping vines. The roots were penetrating my very inward being. I could not move by myself; I was so entangled. My thoughts were always evil. Devils were always before my eyes. I had to worship them and bow down to them night and day. The Witch Doctor made me do many things. I had to do all the evil things that he told me to do. If he would have told me to cut my throat, I would have done it. If he would have said to slash open my stomach, I would have done it. If he would have said to gouge out my eyes, I would have done it. If he would have said to burn my own hair, I would have done it. I would have done anything that the Witch Doctor said. If I had not, the vines would have become tighter around my body and the pain would have been greater than that of torturing my own body. Now, I am converted as well as the Witch Doctor. Many of us now worship Jesus Christ; We have no more desire to worship the Devil or to hurt ourselves. The Demons are all gone."



The Indians believe that in the Worship of Christ, there is complete deliverance from the Devil and his actions. They believe that when Christ has come into their hearts, the Devil is gone with all of his Satanic power and they, themselves, have power to keep the Demons and Devils from them through the Power of the Blood of Jesus Christ. It would be difficult to convince an Indian who has been converted to Christ that any sickness of the body is caused by a Demon because they believe that the Demons have all gone.

It would be a good idea for some of the Exorcists to go to an Indian Tribe that still have their Witch Doctors and their worship of Demons and cast out the Demons from them. They would have a lot of work to do. I know that as a Missionary who has traveled among Christ comes into their lives and the Blood of Jesus is applied, all Demons flee.

On the Amazon River in Colombia there is a congregation of ex-head hunters. Christ took power over the head hunters. Head hunting is a Religion, also, and not a wild and unorganized action. The plan of the head hunter is to take the head of another; shrink the head so that the spirit of the body of the shrunken head may live on in their midst. They feel they do the person a favor by cutting off his head and shrinking it and making the spirit live on this Earth as long as the head is preserved. The Head Hunter, too, worships spirits. And the spirits they worship are to them very divine and powerful. They believe that all spirits eventually will go into another world. talk and converse with one another and live forever. The shrunken head is their contact with the spirits in this world and the world to come.

The conversion of the Head Hunter to Jesus Christ makes him believe that the contact with the next world is through Jesus Christ, Himself. They, too, affirm that all Demons and Devils are gone. They bury the shrunken head in Reverence and Worship GOD.

The Spirit of GOD is moving with such Gigantic Power in Brazil and the Great Amazon Basin that thousands are being converted and won to Christ yearly.

## **28.**

### **THE WEDDING IN THE JUNGLES**

Once a year for thirty days is Wedding time for the Indians in the Jungles according to the position of the moon. After gaining the confidence of the Indians, I was allowed to attend an Indian wedding taking place far deep in the Jungles.

Preparation for this spectacular event took weeks. The girls had been already assigned to the ones they should marry a few days after birth. And the man had been assigned to his marriage partner two years after his birth. They would play together, eat together with absolutely no intimate relations until after the wedding.

I felt I was going to go on one of the most interesting journeys of my whole life. You could feel excitement among the Indians as they talked among themselves preparing for this great

wedding ceremony and for a great hunting and fishing trip. These Indians were a powerful lot. Hunting, fishing, wedding ceremonies were a time to be enjoyed by any Indian Tribe that followed the customs which originated back centuries ago. From the high, icy mountains to the deepest jungles below, the Indians still practiced their original customs.

The fishing, hunting, wedding party consisted of around one hundred fifty people, all of them Indians except me. At sunup the full preparation of this Jungle Journey was ready. The women with their packs on their backs, the hunters with their blowguns, the fishermen with their nets and the girls who were about to be married to their hunter husbands; All were ready. Kettles of Monkey already had been devoured and with everyone's stomach full, we commenced our journey. Walking single file, the women leading to clear the path, using their knives to cut anything that is in the way, the journey started.

There is a peculiar feeling within one's self to know that you are going to penetrate deep into the jungles among a people who had a civilization dating back long before our present day American civilization was even thought of. The screeching of the birds, the noise of the Jungle, the rustling of the trees, the sunlight breaking through from above; It all seemed to be in partnership with everything. Everyone had bathed and all seemed refreshed after a good night's rest.

We walked until around three o'clock in the afternoon using as a thirst quencher juice from Jungle fruit and herbs. The rest periods would last ten minutes. Then, we would get up again and walk at a steady pace. When we would come to a stream or river, there would be a group who had run ahead of us to cut down poles on which to cross the water. There were no shoes on anyone's feet except mine. I had noticed that one of the Indian women was carrying an extra blowgun. I soon learned that it was intended for me. After the first rest period, it was placed into my hand for me to carry. This brought a little fear to me. I might miss a target and maybe I would be taken back and burned with a stone in disgrace. The blowgun is called Boka by this Tribe, the Dart, Borra and the Knife, Chujo. Each article has its own name.

It is quite a technique to cross a stream that is full of Alligators in places. I soon learned that shoes were more of a nuisance than an asset. Crossing the first stream on a pole which was bending from the weight of those crossing with a heavy load on their backs, I slipped and almost fell into the water below.

There was an Indian woman behind me and an Indian man in front of me, leaning on to my blowgun using it as a kind of a hook on the side of the pole, I was hanging on for dear life. My high boots had dipped down into the water. But in a flash, with a heavy load and a baby on her back, this Indian woman, the wife of the hunter before me, grabbed my arm close to my shoulder and with sheer strength and the grip of her feet on the pole pulled me back up until I was sitting straddling the pole.

The Indians looked at me and laughed which they very seldom do. For an Indian to laugh at you means you have done something wrong. They pointed to my shoes. Realizing that this was my trouble, I unlaced the shoes and let them drop into the river and crossed the pole with my bare feet. I found this to be much easier although my feet were a lot more tender than the Indians' who were used to walking through the jungles with bare feet.

At three o'clock according to my watch that I still had, the Indians only looking at the sun's position to determine the time of day, the women began to make camp for a night's rest. The men beckoned for me to come with my blowgun to venture on a little side trip for food which the women would prepare for our meal. The Indians know their jungles well and the habits of the wildlife.

After walking a few minutes we came to a clearing on the side of a hill where the sun was still shining bright. I saw that the tremendously tall trees along the side of the clearing were full of birds. Expertly, the Indians placed their darts into their blowguns. After wrapping the end of the dart with a material that looks very much like cotton taken off the vines in the jungle. The first shots were made into the tall trees. In about a minute after the darts had entered the tops of the trees, birds came flopping down, flapping their wings until they reached the ground. An Indian loaded my blowgun for me, placed it to my mouth and held it for me for he realized that I was no expert hunter.

I filled my lungs full of air, built up a terrific pressure in the mouth piece as the Indian was nodding to me in response that everything was alright. In a few seconds the dart left the blowgun penetrating into the tree and a bird came falling down. I was not ready yet to be called a full-fledged Indian hunter; I was only being trained as a little child would be. I realized that this was no contest and that the Indians were teaching me how to hunt. That realization made me feel a lot better.

The Indian girls to be married were being cared for by the older women. Bathing is a must for everyone night and morning during a hunting trip. A good rub down with a liquid made from the bark of a tree is more soothing than a rub down with any lotion you may buy in a Drugstore. This special preparation penetrates your muscles and feet and feels soothing taking away any soreness and stiffness.

The women had gathered what looked very much like small tomatoes to me, but quite sweet. For dinner that night we had barbecued bird, jungle fruit, juice from the bark of a tree.

And now beds were being prepared. No good hunter carries his own bed. You have fresh, new ones every night. The women rip off the bark of the trees and quickly weave them together around the poles that have been strapped to trees. And soon we were all in bed for a night's sleep in the Jungles.

Not a mosquito bit me although there were plenty around us. I suffered no bites of any kind, not even from poisonous ants. The smell of a certain jungle preparation kept them away from me.

The friendliness of the Indians was so wonderful that I felt that I had a special protection. Men have died trying to penetrate these jungles alone. This is impossible; One cannot survive in such a place for very long without the help of the Indians.

After a good night's sleep we were awakened by a heavy rain; The sun was not shining that day and the hot rainwater splashed down off the leaves of the trees. But, It seemed to make no difference; In a few moments the fire was burning brightly, breakfast was prepared and things were being made ready for another day's journey.

The Bronze bodies of the Indians seemed to glitter and sparkle as they became wet from the rain. I found it more pleasant and comfortable to throw my shirt away and be more like an

Indian than to leave it on. However, one of the Indian women picked it up and slung it across her shoulder thinking no doubt that I might need it later when it became dry again.

I pulled my watch out to look at it from the front pocket of my pants which were wringing wet and found that it was still running, a big, old fashioned, heavy, silver Waltham watch. And right on the dot of eight we started on our journey; It is interesting how the Indians know their time. You can set your watch by their accuracy. I would soon learn that animals were good time keepers, also, and even the birds have certain hours of the day for their habits.

The first stream that we came to on this day was as clear as crystal. You could see the rocks on the bottom of the river. Some of the men had walked out in the stream which was running rapidly, coming down from the mountains. We had gained quite a little altitude because for the last few hours we had been climbing a steep grade. We were to go to an area in the foot hills of the mountains.

The air was fresher and cooler, but not cold enough yet to feel chilly. The fishermen were standing in the clear water with nets, but there was not a fish to be seen anywhere. It had stopped raining. The clouds were breaking up in the sky and the sun began to peep through and shine on this portion of the river.

And here came some of the women with poles, poking at the rocks on the bottom of the river and to my surprise hundreds of fish came out from under the rocks and were then expertly caught in the nets that the Indians held all the way across the river, making a trap for them into which to swim. Each net was loaded, I knew then that we were going to have fish for our meal. And sure enough, they were going to boil it; I knew that this would be a much healthier way to eat it.

After the Indians had brought their heavy catch from the river, other fish were at the bottom of the river now holding on to rocks with their mouths. I learned that these fish do not bite, but suck their prey into their mouths. They can, also, hold onto the rocks with this sucking action as this had been their sleeping time. The Fishermen knew where they would be just at the right time to catch them.

Again, at three o'clock this fishing day, the Indians prepared camp. The water in the clear river was much cooler and refreshing. While meal was being prepared from the catch of fish we started out again to hunt. This time it was a herd of wild pigs some of the most ferocious animals of the jungles. One had to learn to be a quick and good tree climber when hunting wild pigs. Instead of a blowgun, it is now the powerful bow and arrow that will be used to kill the wild pig.

This time I decided it was better to climb a tree and watch. Being no expert with bow and arrow among such animals can mean sudden death. However, one of the men beckoned me to come down and stand between two of them. As they pulled back their bows, the arrows found their marks in the side of the wild pig. It was amazing to see how expertly the arrows had found the hearts of the pigs as they cut up the pigs, I saw where the arrow penetrated into the vicinity of the heart. We were the next morning on our way to the place where the great wedding ceremonial should take place after a night's rest and pig for that morning's breakfast. The young girls, who looked to be about fifteen to seventeen years old and who were all virgins, had been washed and bathed by the older women.

Their hair was clean and hanging down below their ears, cut all the way around, not with scissors as a barber would use, but cut with sharpened stones which had been split after being taken from the bottom of the river.

The Muscles of these young women displayed the perfect specimens of the Humans they were. The hard work that they had done during their childhood had made them strong and powerful and able to lift heavy loads several times their own weight.

But, this was not to be a time of work for these young women, but a time of the great wedding ceremony. The older women were treating them all like Queens.

I felt like an intruder and waited for the Indians to take me back to the main camp. However, they convinced me that I must not go back; I was welcome and I must go with them.

After several days of traveling, hunting and fishing, I learned how to use the blowgun. It is one of the greatest natural protectors for the Indians in their way of life. It is different than a rifle, a shotgun or a pistol for there is no noise with a blowgun and the enemy cannot tell from where the dart comes. The birds can be shot from the trees and not disturb any other birds that may be around. Whereas, with a regular gun, one blast and the prey is gone. The Indians became quite pleased with my marksmanship and they danced with joy around me and initiated me as a full-fledged hunter.

After two weeks of travel, coming close to the place where the ceremonial should be celebrated, I used seven darts and got seven birds. They were picked up by the women and carried back to the camp which had been prepared for that night; The Indians singing and shouting happily, surrounding me one by one, giving me bear hugs. I could feel a real closeness in the friendship and admiration that they had for me.

After three more days of travel, we came to the spot on the mountain side where the great wedding was to be officiated. It was one of the most beautiful spots that I had ever seen. It was like an oasis with waterfalls and even hot springs. It caused a steam to penetrate into the air one hundred feet. And when the sun shone upon it all, everything glittered like many precious stones. Flowers were growing everywhere with vines hanging down from the top of the trees with blooms all colors of the rainbow.

The Indian women began to prepare a massive camp for the entire party of one hundred fifty persons to make a home during the celebration of the wedding days. The older women kept watch over the young Brides-To-Be and rubbed their skin with Jungle manufactured juice from the flowers. It more than compared with the finest of French perfumes.

The next morning all arose at daybreak. Breakfast consisted of Tinto, Yucca and Bananas. The young girls were given their breakfasts on large leaves as they sat around the waterfalls in their beauty and graceful positions.

The older women began to prepare for the great affair. Men with their long, sharp, wicked-looking knives were cutting bark from the trees to prepare the beds for the spectacular wedding ceremony. To see this whole operation in action made you realize that you are about to witness in a few days a tradition which had been carried on for many years.

A pile of sharpened stakes were lying in a heap. One stake had been trimmed of its bark and markings were on it.

The sun beamed through the next morning from the East; It shone on a rock which glistened like a diamond.

And Indian man, who seemed to be the director of it all, carried the hewn stake in his hand. Three men, each having three pieces of hardened limbs with a knot on the ends of them, drove the stake into the ground to a mark on the stake. The top of the stake was not damaged in any way. There was a ring cut around the top of the stake and a palmetto cord could be fastened on it with a swivel action, stretching the palmetto cord directly into the sun.

My watch told me that it was exactly nine o'clock. With expert accuracy, two men stood facing the sun on either side of the stake. The left arm of one man to the North, the other with his right arm to the South. Two more stakes were driven to the North and to the South. A stake was driven the same distance to the end of the palmetto cord to the East.

The rest of the stakes were driven in a perfect half circle, marking the ground area for the Jungle huts to be built.

Behind the half circle to the West, a row of individual huts were ready to be constructed. After four days of feverish work, all the huts were finished. Facing the West were twenty four huts, each one having its own door made from flowers and woven branches like work.

The Palmetto Roofs shone bright and new in the noon day sun overhead. Each hut in the entire complex was at least three feet from the ground. Protruding from each doorway was a pole with steps hewn into it. One has to know how to walk on those to get into the hut.

The huts facing the West were the Bridal Suites. The Huts in the half circle were for the rest of the party. In the center of the half circle was the place of the wedding ceremony and the celebration. Directly west of the Bridal Suites, the ground was cleared back at least thirty feet and covered with thousands of leaves and blooms of flowers. The fragrance of this combination of leaves and blooms in the cool of the evening was as if the air had become almost Celestial. After the whole task was completed, the hunters went out to get the food and brought in birds, pigs, frogs and fish for the big celebration.

Early the next morning, always the time of bathing, the Indian maidens sat on the warm rocks and bathed in the hot springs. The men were in another part bathing in one of the other hot springs. The next day we passed away resting, talking while the women were preparing the great feast which was to take place in the cool of the evening.

In the center of the half circle a large kitchen had been built. The bed of the fire was on the top of clay and dirt about three feet from the ground. The fire had been burning for about three hours in the late afternoon. Hanging over the fire from the rafters of the kitchen-like structure were monkey, fish, the birds and frogs. The flames at times would reach up and singe the meat.

Two men stood by to throw water on the flames so that only the heat of the fire would penetrate the meat to cook it and give it a flavor, something like our barbecue at home, The difference beings, it had been seasoned with jungle herbs that the Indians know so well.

Each bride that night had gone to the huts facing the West to sleep. The future husbands were still with the crowd in the compound after we all had our fill of food. It soon would be bedtime for all. The next day would be the Wedding Day, an all Day Affair!

There were the usual morning baths for everybody; The brides being prepared by the older women for the great wedding. Their hair was full of flowers, their bodies were covered with a fragrance of the petals. The actual wedding ceremony would start at twelve o'clock sharp. It was an all afternoon ritual. The bowing of the young girls to their future husbands, ceremonial walks and exercises, each older woman watching over the young brides-to-be at every moment.

For a moment I, again, felt like an intruder. When on the other hand, I could sense the welcome everybody was affording me. Several different kinds of feelings came over me, wondering every moment what was going to happen next. I realized that this observance was going to be one of the greatest honors and trusts that could be bestowed upon a friend. The first outsider to witness this ceremony among the Indians.

I, also, realized that this was their custom and tradition, a way of life, that the Indians had practiced for hundreds of years. Little did I realize that I should have a part in the actual wedding. At exactly twelve o'clock noon I was led by one of the men to a place of prominence. I was told that I should stand between the Priests who would perform the wedding ceremony. Slowly, we walked to stand at certain degrees around the outside of the Half Circle.

It was a beautiful day, the air was clear and the sense of smell from the fragrant jungle flowers penetrated your nostrils. Monkeys were in the trees swinging from branch to branch as if they, too, sense the importance of the occasion.

It was life of the jungles in action; It was the day of expectancy coming to pass for the young maidens. It was the time that she should be joined to her pledged hunter-husband and it was the time which would start the bearing of offspring to the Tribe.

These Indians at this wedding ceremony used absolutely no drugs, only for repelling diseases, not for over-indulgence. Marriage ceremonies had taken place in this very spot for centuries. So, the operation and ceremonial procedures went along with surprising ease and accuracy. Timing was of the moment, for moment by moment each part of the ceremony should come to pass.

The sun will go down around six o'clock and everyone goes to bed a little after sundown in the jungles so I knew that the Ritual would not be over six hours long. It was emotionally interesting to be a part of this affair that I did not feel even one bit of tiredness or fatigue. My whole thought was to win everyone for Christ and turn this celebrated occasion into a Heavenly Blessing.

I learned from conversations that the wife must provide the husband with a child or she would be a disgrace forever and she would become only a sort of servant or a slave for the other women for the rest of her life. She would no longer be allowed to come near her husband or even to touch him.

During the ceremonial walks and the exercises, the older women watched over the young future brides every moment. There had been no kissing or hugging. She is Pure, Clean, A Virgin, A Gift of GOD to the man.

Every moment something different was happening. A special ceremonial welcome was now being held for me. For I was to have part in giving away one of the maidens. I realized that

this was a great honor. Me, the first outsider, a stranger of a different race, yet being able to participate in this great ceremony. Taking part in a tradition, a way of life which has been practiced for hundreds of years, made me feel blessed with enrichment for my being.

Even the weather was favorable to us as there was no rain today, a very unusual happening in a Rain Forest.

The brides-to-be were sitting on logs that had been placed in a row in the back of the rock. Behind them stood the older women caring for their needs. At the extreme back end of the compound stood the intended bridegrooms. Each one was examined by word of mouth and had to answer questions put to them by the leader of the Tribe. After they had answered the questions, they received the initiation, the ceremonial order of obedience to the Tribe which had been spoken and given down through the years.

Each hunter, who should give the young girl away and escort her to the hut must now prepare to carry out the function. We, too, sat in front of the intended bridegroom as we handed over our authority of the bride-to-be into the hands of the future bridegroom.

There were singing and talking; Yet It was a serious affair. Each destined bridegroom then walked and stood directly behind each hunter who should give the young girl away. The older women had their hands upon the heads of the girls; slowly, they walked toward us. Each girl was passed into our hands. We all caught hold of hands in a chain fashion as the male marriage partner stood before us. The older women then left their positions and stood hand in hand in a chain form between them. The ceremony was about to take place.

The elders and leaders of the party stepped forward; Each had a lighted wood in his hand and holding them between us they began to speak the words of the marriage ceremony. "We Unite You Together Forever. And Your Children Shall Be A Part Of Us Forever." There is nowhere in their ceremony anything that says, "Until Death Do Us Part." Altogether, the wording lasted for about a half an hour.

The elders of the Tribe walked behind each bride and bridegroom, laying their hands on them and saying words in their own language which have been said many times before. In the tradition of the Tribe a male guest is allowed to accompany them to their place of abode where they will live. Being one of the guests and being welcomed into a place of prominence, I was invited to accompany one of the couples to the hut on the west side of the encampment.

When the ceremony was almost finished, the brides and bridegrooms joined hands. Each male guest held the right hand of the bride. A line was formed by the brides, bridegrooms and the accompanying male guests. We slowly walked seven times around the entire encampment, finally standing in front of the individual hut where the bride and the bridegroom would live for the next three months.

The sun was going down over the great Andes Mountains. The rays were penetrating into the doorways of each hut, lighting up the flowers and the inside of the hut. We walked very slowly to the entrance of each hut, the bridegroom and each guest holding the hands of each bride. Gracefully she walked up the hewed-out poles into the doorway, turning herself around to face the west, her bronze body lit up in the fading sunlight.



As I quickly glanced to my right and to my left, I saw each bride standing in her doorway looking beautiful, Happy and contented. Then, up the poles walked her hunter husband; The door was closed, the ceremony was over.

The next day was to be a day of joyful celebration for the rest of the Tribe. The Great Event had been accomplished.



COLOMBIA, SOUTH AMERICA.

GETTING JUNGLE CART READY FOR  
TRIP  
INTO THE JUNGLES



YOUNG INDIAN CONVERTS  
OF THE AMAZON BASIN JUNGLES.



WITCH DOCTOR, AMAZON BASIN .



1962 . ALONG A BRAZILIAN RIVER;  
I HAVE TRAVELED MANY  
OF THESE RIVERS.



PRAYING FOR THE SICK  
IN THE INTERIOR.



DURING MISSIONARY WORK IN THE  
AMAZON BASIN  
DURING THE EARLY SIXTIES

WHILE JOURNEYING THROUGH  
THESE TERRITORIES  
I SAW LIFE AS IT HAD BEEN LIVED  
HUNDREDS OF YEARS AGO.  
PEOPLE WHO LIVE IN A WAY THAT  
SEEMS IMPOSSIBLE TO US NOW.



BOATS READY FOR TRAVEL  
ON THE AMAZON.

WHEN YOU GET TO THE JUNGLE'S  
PRIMITIVE AREAS, YOU MUST  
EITHER

TAKE A SMALL BOAT AND TRAVEL  
ON THE RIVERS, OR YOU MUST RIDE  
A HORSE, OR YOU CAN WALK  
THROUGH JUNGLE TRAILS TO  
FULFILL THE MISSION OF YOUR  
CALLING.



A POOR FAMILY WON TO JESUS  
IN CENTRAL AMERICA 50 YEARS  
AGO.



WALKING DOWN A VILLAGE  
STREET ALONG THE PUTUMAYO  
RIVER .

THROUGHOUT THE YEARS I FOUND  
MYSELF  
MANY TIMES IN VILLAGES TYPICAL  
OF THE ABOVE WHEN PREPARING A  
TRIP  
INTO THE JUNGLES.



BUS RIDE  
THROUGH THE ANDES MOUNTAINS.



1964. LETICIA, COLOMBIA,  
SOUTH AMERICA.



OUR SON FRED, DOING HIS BEST  
DURING THE WAR YEARS TO KEEP  
TRUCKS AND  
AND EQUIPMENT GOING TO BE  
USED IN MEETINGS .



IN MY TRAVELS IN SOUTH AMERICA  
I MET MANY INDIANS SIMILAR TO THESE.

BORN INTO A WORLD OF  
PRIMITIVENESS WHERE THEIR FUTURE  
COULD ONLY OFFER THEM THE SAME KIND  
OF LIFE THAT THEIR ANCESTORS HAD  
"LIVED FOR HUNDREDS OF YEARS.

BRINGING THEM TO CHRIST MADE THE  
DIFFERENCE.



TYPICAL RIVER SCENE IN SOUTH AMERICA; NATIVES IN  
SMALL BOATS UTILIZING THE RIVER TO CARRY FOODSTUFFS AND SUPPLIES  
AND MISSIONARIES USING THE RIVER FOR THEIR TRAVEL.  
IN SOME PLACES, IT IS THE ONLY MODE OF TRAVEL.

## **PART IV: SECTION DIVIDE**

### **In Closing.**

#### **29.**

### **GIVING GIVES HEAVENLY BLESSINGS IN RETURN.**

Giving Unto The Lord Gives Heavenly Blessings In Return.

Abraham paid tithes to Melchizedek even to a tenth of all of his spoils. Every tenth part of the land producing food, Abraham gave a tenth of this crop to the Lord....A tenth of his cattle, His sheep, His oxen.

God promised him that his seed would be as the sand of the sea. Practice of paying tithes is very ancient, for we find in Genesis 14:20 that Abraham paid tithes to Melchizedek, King of Salem, at his return from his expedition against Chedorlaomer and the four Kings in confederacy with him.

Abraham gave him the tenth of all of the booty taken from the enemy. Jacob initiated this Piety of his Grandfather when he vowed to the Lord: -The Tithe of all the substance he might acquire in Mesopotamia.

Under the law Moses ordained in Leviticus 27:30,31,32: "And All The Tithe Of All The Land, Whether Of The Seed Of The Land, Or Of The Fruit Of The Tree, Is The Lord's: It Is Holy Unto The Lord."

There were three sorts of tithes to be paid by the people (besides these from the Levites to the Priests) Numbers 28:26,27.

Number 1: To the Levites for their maintenance. (Numbers 18:21-24).

Number 2: For the Lord's Feast and Sacrifices, to be eaten in the place which the Lord would choose to be put His name there, to wit, where the Ark should be, the Tabernacle, or Temple. This tenth part was either sent to Jerusalem in kind or if it was too far, they sent the value in money, which was to be paid out for oxen, sheep, wine or what else they pleased. (Deuteronomy 14:22,23,24 and 25).

Number 3: In addition to these two, there was to be every third year a tithe for the poor, to be eaten in their own dwellings. (Deuteronomy 14:28,29).

We are building THE JOY OF HEAVEN BIBLE INSTITUTE at 4216 East Highway 390, Panama City, Florida 32405.

All the proceeds of this book, except the expenses to publish it, will be used and is being used for the construction "of the buildings which the Lord has instructed me to name: "THE JOY OF HEAVEN BIBLE INSTITUTE".

The name of the Sanctuary will be "JOY OF HEAVEN". The Lord had told me to occupy until He comes and THAT without question will be very soon. Please read Exodus 25:2,3,4,5,6,7 and 8; Moses speaks of the offerings for the Tabernacle and the materials for it:

"Speak Unto The Children Of Israel, That They Bring Me An Offering: Of Every Man That Giveth It Willingly With His Heart Ye Shall Take My Offering. And This Is The Offering Which Ye Shall Take Of Them; Gold, And Silver, And Brass, And Blue, And Purple, And Scarlet, And Fine Linen, And Goat's Hair, And Ram's skins Dyed Red, And Badgers' Skins, And Shittim Wood. Oil For The Light, Spices For Anointing Oil, And For Sweet Incense. Onyx Stones, And Stones To Be Set In The Ephod, And In The Breastplate. And Let Them Make Me A Sanctuary; That I May Dwell Among Them."

GOD had told me to build a Sanctuary with a tower building right next to it, that I can lead an intercession of prayer warriors, that we can hear from Heaven and get the Voice of the Lord on every move I make; Traveling around the world to every nation and testifying to the peoples.

Moses, being the spokesman for GOD, a much higher position than that of any Earthly President's spokesman, instructed the people on the "Heave Offering", one of the most important offerings in the Bible. The reason it is one of the most important is this: I saw the blessings being heaved out of the Windows of Heaven as Moses and Jesus and all of the Prophets watched as they were being heaved out.

The Tithes Blessing was automatic. If the Earthly people stopped Tithing, Heaven's Windows of Blessing would close.

That is why it will all be finished at the Rapture. And this will take place before the Great Tribulation. The Great Tribulation means just that, -The Last Tribulation. The Church has been going through smaller tribulations ever since Jesus established it. I, certainly, do not want to be here during the Great Tribulation. This is when the Windows of Heaven will be closed.

The "Heave Offering" covers the rest of the offerings; Love, Sacrifice and Whatever offering you decide to give to the Lord. While the Tithes offering brings you a yearly blessing, the "Heave Offering" brings you a permanent blessing.

You can Heave as much as a Hundredfold in a "Heave Offering". This is where you not only Heave in your Gold and Silver and Paper Money, but you Heave in your Diamonds, your Watches; you won't need a watch in Heaven, -There will be no more time. I know a man that Heaved in his beautiful watch and he received twenty back in a few days! You can practically Heave in anything, as long as it is GOD's Temple, both Temporal and Spiritual.

In Heaven, standing with Jesus, Moses and all of the rest of the Heavenly Present, I saw the blessings being Heaved out of Heaven. It was a wonderful sight to see one hundredfold going out. This is what is going to cause the wicked to turn their wealth into the hands of the righteous, to take this old world for Jesus!

Many People have Gold and Silver and Jewelry, not doing any good. Heave it into the offering of the Lord; It can be sold for money to build the JOY OF HEAVEN BIBLE INSTITUTE.

This way the value is turned into money to buy the necessities for the building of it.

People from the earliest times and of many races sacrificed to the GOD they worshipped. How MUCH MORE we, as Christians, should sacrifice to the Living GOD, to the True GOD, the GOD Who pours out blessings to us while the idol gods give no blessings.

This was the requirement of all the gods to give offerings through the leaders to all these idols. Today, we are not living under the dispensation of the law, but under the dispensation of Love and Grace. When I sat on the Love Seat in Heaven, the Love offerings were explained to me and how I should tell it on the Earth.

I should tell the people of this Earth that by spreading the Gospel by whatever means, -Tape Albums, Satellite, Television, Radio; They would receive a great reward Heaving their offerings unto the Lord.

Our Translation Department in itself, translating the Book and the Tape Albums into various languages, is a tremendous project of Love that souls might be ready to enter the Kingdom.

From Love we turn to Sacrifice. There were many laws regarding the Sacrifice Offerings. How much better it is because GIVING GIVES HEAVENLY BLESSINGS IN RETURN.

We Love GOD and one another! And this we know...that we will get a great reward both here and in Eternity.

Cain brought an offering unto the Lord. He had much more of this World's goods than did Abel. Abel received a greater blessing because he gave in the Spirit of Love. It is not always the greatest offering that counts; It is in what spirit it is given. However, the more the better, you can do so much more for GOD with abundance. Nevertheless, GOD blesses all offerings, large and small.

When you cook food with Holy Hands and a contrite Heart and bring the food unto the House of the Lord or prepare it in a place close to the Lord's House, this brings blessing. You can break bread together and bless the bread. In return, the Substance of the food will bless your body with health.

Aaron and his sons made a vow voluntarily to give offerings unto the Lord and He was blessed by lands and He prospered even as did Abraham. Jesus spoke of the sower that went out to sow and the crops were blessed one hundredfold because they planted the seed in the name of the Lord and asked Him to bless the seed as it went into the ground.

I can still see my Grandfather Cox on his knees, laying his hands on the ground and asking GOD to bring forth a hundredfold. Not one time did he ever have a crop failure. He gave ever so generously to African Missions alone.

Let's read about the "Heave Offering" again as told in Exodus 29:27. "And Thou Shalt Sanctify The Breast Of The Wave Offering, And The Shoulder Of The Heave Offering, Which Is Waved, And Which Is Heaved Up, Of The Ram Of The Consecration, Even Of That Which Is For Aaron, And Of That Which Is For His Sons."

Read Numbers 15:19,20 where it says: "Then It Shall Be, That, When You Eat Of The Bread Of The Land, Ye Shall Offer Up An Heave Offering Unto The Lord. Ye shall Offer Up A Cake Of The First Of Your Dough For An Heave Offering; As Ye Do The Heave Offering Of The Threshingfloor, So Shall Ye Heave It."

The mixing of the flour into dough and kneading it was a great occasion among the worshippers of the true GOD. It was customary for those who believed in the Living GOD, the GOD of Israel, before they put the bread into the oven, to cut off the first tenth and Heave it in the air for the Priest to catch and then bake it unto the Lord and place it in the Temple as a sacrifice unto the Lord.

How beautiful this was! It was such an occasion that the children of Israel gathered around with joy at the baking of the bread.

In the JOY OF HEAVEN BIBLE INSTITUTE grounds we are building an oven outside with just a roof over it to bake the bread to be used for those attending. Jesus told us about the Bread of Life. And the Bread of Life is the Word of GOD forever which Jesus told me in Heaven to Heave out into all the world as an offering of love, even to the wicked, that they may know the joy of the Lord. We are doing it; Translating this book of Heaven and the Tapes and Heaving them to all the world.

Then, we speak of the Fruit Offering. Our Burnt Offering today comes through the Baptism of the Holy Ghost, speaking with other tongues as the Spirit gives utterance. The Word says, you should be filled with the Holy Ghost and with fire... And the Fire burns out all the dross.

It is a marvelous sight in Heaven to see the prayers of the Saints coming up from the Earth and landing on the Golden Altar, prayers of all the intercessors and travailers, the desperate prayers, the cry of the mother for her daughter and all her children, the cry of those whose little children had been kidnapped, or missing, -All landing on the Golden Altar.

The Angels, the Archangels and the Souls of the women including Mary, the Mother of Jesus, and my mother picking them up in their hands and placing the prayers on the Brazen Altar. To watch these prayers mixing with Water from the River of Life and turning into a vapour and going up around the Head of GOD The Father (That is why you can't see His Face) also mingling with the Fire from the Altar, what a great experience that was for me!

After the prayers had gone around the Throne, I could see the answers going through the Windows of Heaven on the way back to this Earth. Of course, there is an emergency number you can call which is J E S U S!

Then comes the Peace Offering. The Peace Offering is very much a part of the Passover. It was customary for all the different ones of Israel to bring all their Quarrels and Differences to the Passover, to eat together. Then, after the meal was over, to dance together, put their arms of Love around one another and come together in Peace.

How much more beautiful it is to make peace with Jesus and come together and forgive one another of all of our differences. That is why we dance together today because we have been redeemed by the Blood of the Lamb!

While the Blood of the animals was the type of offering in the Old Testament, how much more precious is now the Blood of Jesus to bring us together in Love.



The Lord told me to bring together all the different Nationalities, to dance together, to have joy together and to say to one another: "I Love You!" This will supersede all the guns and the bullets that man had made. Let the Earthly battles rage; The Bible says, "Love Your Enemies". Our first dance will be in Philadelphia; Dancers will come from all over the World to dance together in the Holy Ghost. Let us offer up our praises to the Lord and blow the trumpet in Zion to remind the Earth that Jesus is coming!

In the Old Testament, the Scriptures speak of the trespass offering and the wave offering and then there is the Wood Offering. How beautiful it is to be a carpenter in the House of the Lord and build for Him. Jesus was practically raised in a carpenter's shop. He must have learned a lot about the Earthly buildings from Joseph, His Earthly Father.

Read John 14:2. "In My Father's House Are Many Mansions" ...GOD The Father creates everything for His Son Jesus to use to build the New Heaven.

A worker for Jesus who comes into the Ministry gives his or her life wholly for Jesus forever. There is no turning back.

King David offered peace offerings as told in 2 Samuel 6:17. King Solomon offered peace offerings as we find in 1 Kings 3:15. Priests were appointed for the peace offerings. GOD is appointing Ministers of Helps to build the Kingdom of the Lord.

Manasseh offered peace offerings for the purpose of making reconciliation with one another. (2 Chronicles 33:16). The Priests offered peace offerings, the Princes offered their peace offerings. This is a type of the true Church today, to bring peace into our lives and make peace with one another and love the Lord and dance for joy.

The early Church brought offerings to the feet of the Apostles; They laid the offerings there to establish the early Church upon this Earth. There is no place in the Word of GOD where any of these offerings should cease. Because Love brings the offerings of joy and peace to the Lord.

Every offering we give, be it Tithes or any other, - When it is done in LOVE, it fulfills the Word of Jesus.



DR. COLLETT AND KENNETH COPELAND  
IN ATLANTA, GEORGIA MEETING.

KENNETH COPELAND HOLDING THE MIKE  
WHILE DR. COLLETT WAS PROPHECYING.

## **PART V: SECTION DIVIDE**

### **Introduction to: MY GRANDMOTHER'S PRAYER BOOK**

**And**

### **Testimonies Of Those Who Rejoice In The Lord**

**(Suggested Reading For Christians Desiring  
A Fulfilling Life - Walk With Christ).**

I was taught to go to church regularly. I well remember the different Churches that our family attended. The Village of Shottswell had a very high Spire and I can remember quite vividly the ringing of the Church Bells for the different occasions; At Christmas time, the Bells ringing Christmas Carols and at weddings, the Wedding Bells, and the Toll Bells at Funerals. The Muffled Bell ringing the Annoucement that someone had just died. The Bells were not tinny, but pleasant to the Ear and the Bell Ringers were Famous.

Right next to the Church lived the Tuckeys. Mr. Tuckey was Postmaster and had a nice little store; He, also, was a Maker of Caskets which he made by hand.

It was quite a treat to go to Banbury to the larger Church and it always interested me because it was different. And one of the most exciting experiences of my young life was to attend Christ Church in Oxford. Going to Church on Sunday was a must. While living at Edgehill on the Old Battle Grounds, the family attended two Churches; The Church at Radway and the Old Church at Oxhill. My sister is buried there. This Church had only one bell and the ringing of that bell was handed down from father to son. My sister's son, Tom, took over the job when his father died. All these old Churches have a great History behind them.

After my father sold out, we moved to a village close to Oxford...A place called Hampton Poyle. Here again, we attended two Churches. The Hampton Poyle Church was small, yet very pretty. During World War II, thieves stole all the copper off the roof. The Munitions Companies would ask no questions as to where metals came from, so I was told, upon visiting England after that War. The walk from Hampton Poyle across the river through the country took us to the Kidlington Church, a very large Church where I sang in the Choir. It was quite Famous for its Alms Houses where the Old Widows lived.

The different Architectures of these various Churches included Roman, Gothic, Saxon, among others. The Collett Family was Stone Masons and they built Churches. The family emigrated from France in the Thirteenth Century and they traveled back and forth between France and England quite frequently.

The final blessing to me was when the Bishop of Oxford in Christ Church laid his hands on my head and I was confirmed as a member of the Church and recommended for Ordination.

My Mother was a Baptist; However, it was customary for the wife to attend the Church of her husband. It was unheard for families to separate into different Doctrines in those days. Real Salvation was practiced in the home and especially the Speaking in Tongues, such as my dear Grandfather Cox did.

Harvest Festivals were beautiful celebrations. The Song..."All Is Safely Gathered In, Ere The Winter's Storms Begin" really meant something. The Vicar would visit the Farmers to see if all the crops were harvested. Grandfather Cox set aside every tenth acre for Tithing and this is why GOD blessed him so greatly. He, also, gave much to African Missions.

As a young child, after my Mother died, from the age of six until I was fourteen. I spent a great deal of time with both of my grandparents; going back to Edgehill for my schooling and then to my grandparents during school vacation time.

Grandfather and Grandmother Cox were an influence on my life and especially, Grandmother Cox who would read her prayer book to me which was a guide in my young Christian life. I would listen to her read from the book in front of an oak wood fire and these truths became established in my heart at an early age. Tea would be brought to the table at three thirty in the afternoon and it was customary for all present to get on their knees and pray. Grandfather Cox, with his long sweeping beard and his piercing Holy Ghost Eyes could make you feel the Mighty Power of GOD come Alive in His Praying!

And now, as you read the following next s, the same words my Grandmother read to me so long ago. May the impact of the Thought-Searching words bring you into a consecrated, daily walk with Jesus, our Lord, and I know it will be a special blessing to those of you who have just come to the Saviour as it was a blessing to me in my young Christian Life.....



CHURCH AT OXHILL.



INTERIOR OF OXHILL CHURCH.  
CIRCA 1872, SHOWING THE SCREEN  
AT THE CHANCEL END BEFORE

IT WAS REMOVED TO THE TOWER.



THE SOUTH DOOR OF OXHILL  
CHURCH.



RADWAY, ENGLAND.

### 30.

## MY GRANDMOTHER'S PRAYER BOOK

Our Lives Kept For Jesus:  
Many a heart has echoed the little song:

"Take My Life, And Let It Be  
Consecrated, Lord, To Thee !"

And yet those echoes have not been in every case and at all times so clear and full and firm, so continuously glad as we would wish and perhaps expected. Some of us have said:

"I Launch Me Forth Upon A Sea  
Of Boundless Love And Tenderness;"

and after a little we have found or fancied, that there is a hidden leak in our Barque and though we are doubtless still afloat, yet we are not sailing with the same free, exultant confidence as at first. What is it that has dulled and weakened the echo of our consecration song? What is the little leak that hinders the swift and buoyant course of our consecrated life? Holy Father, let Thy Loving Spirit guide the Hand that writes and strengthen the Heart of everyone who reads what shall be written, for Jesus' sake.

While many a sorrowfully-varied answer to these questions may and probably will arise from touched and sensitive consciences. Each being shown by GOD's Faithful Spirit the Special Sin, the yielding to temptation which has hindered and spoiled the blessed life which they sought to enter and enjoy. It seems to me that one or other of two things has lain at the outset of the failure and disappointment.

First, it may have arisen from want of the simplest belief in the simplest fact, as well as want of trust in one of the simplest and plainest words our gracious Master ever uttered! The unbelieved fact being simply that He hears us; The untrusted word being one of those plain, broad foundation-stones on which we rested our whole weight, it may be many years ago, and which we had no idea we ever doubted or were in any danger of doubting now,—"Him That Cometh To Me I Will In No Wise Cast Out."

"Take my Life!" We have said it or sung it before the Lord, it may be many times; But if it were only once whispered in His ear with full purpose of heart, should we not believe that He heard it? And if we know that He heard it, should we not believe that He has answered it and fulfilled this, our heart's desire? For with Him, hearing means heeding. Then why should we doubt that He did verily take our lives when we offered them--our bodies when we presented them? Have we not been wronging His Faithfulness all this time by practically, even if unconsciously, doubting whether the prayer ever really reached Him? And if so, is it any wonder that we have not realized all the power and joy of full consecration? By some means or other He has to teach us to trust implicitly at every step of the way. And so, if we did not really trust in this matter, He has had to let us find out our want of trust by withholding the sensible part of the blessing and thus stirring us up to find out why it is withheld.

An offered gift must be either accepted or refused. Can He have refused it when He has said, "Him That Cometh To Me I Will In No Wise Cast Out"? If not, then it must have been accepted. It is just the same process as when we came to Him first of all, with the intolerable burden of our sins. There was no help for it but to come with them to Him and take His word for it that He would not and did not cast us out. And so coming, so believing, we found rest to our souls; We found that His word was true and that His taking away our sins was a reality.

Some give their lives to Him then and there and go forth to live thenceforth not at all unto themselves, but unto Him who died for them. This is as it should be, for conversion and consecration ought to be simultaneous. But, practically it is not very often so except with those in whom the bringing out of darkness into marvelous light has been sudden and dazzling, and full of deepest contrasts. More so frequently, the work resembles the case of the Hebrew servant described in Exodus XXI, who, after six years' experience of a good master's service, dedicates himself voluntarily, unreservedly and irrevocably to it, saying, "I Love My Master; I Will Not Go Out Free;" the master then accepting and sealing him to a life-long service, free in law, yet bound in love. This seems to be a figure of later consecration founded on experience and love.

And yet, as at our first coming, it is less than nothing, worse than nothing that we have to bring; For our lives, even our redeemed and pardoned lives are not only weak and worthless "but defiled and sinful. But thanks be to GOD for the Altar that sanctifieth the gift, even our Lord Jesus Christ Himself! By Him we draw nigh unto GOD; To Him, as one with the Father, we offer our living sacrifice; In Him, as the Beloved of the Father, we know it is accepted. So,

dear friends, when once He has wrought in us the desire to be altogether His own and put into our hearts the prayer, "Take My Life," "let us go on our way rejoicing, believing that He HAS taken our lives, our hands, our feet, our voices, our intellects, our wills, our wholeselves, to be ever, only, all for Him. Let us consider THAT a blessedly settled thing; Not because of anything we have felt, or said, or done, but because we know that He heareth us and because we know that He is true to His word.

But, suppose our hearts do not condemn us in this matter, our disappointment may arise from another cause. It may be that we have not received because we have not asked a fuller and further blessing. Suppose that we did believe, thankfully and surely, that the Lord heard our prayer, and that He did indeed answer and accept us and set us apart for Himself; And yet we find that our consecration was not merely miserably incomplete, but that we have drifted back again almost to where we were before. Or suppose things are not quite so bad as that, still we have not quite all we expected; And even if we think we can truly say, "O GOD, my heart is fixed," we find that to our daily sorrow, somehow or other the details of our conduct do not seem to be fixed. Something or other is perpetually slipping through till we get perplexed and distressed. Then we are tempted to wonder whether after all there was not some mistake about it and the Lord did not really take us at our word although we took Him at His Word. And then the struggle with one doubt and entanglement and temptation only seems to land us in another. What is to be done then?

First, I think, very humbly and utterly honestly to search and try our ways before our GOD; Or rather, as we shall soon realize our helplessness to make such a search. Ask Him to do it for us, praying for His promised Spirit o show us unmistakably if there is any secret thing with us that is hindering both the inflow and utflow of His Grace to us and through us. Do not let us shrink from some unexpected flash into ark corner; Do not let us wince at the sudden touching of a Plague-Spot. The Lord always does His own work thoroughly if we will only let Him do it; If we put our case into His hands, He will search and probe fully and firmly, though very tenderly. Very painfully, it may be, but only that He may do the very thing we want,-cleanse us and heal us thoroughly, so that we may set off to walk in real newness of life. But, if we do not put it unreservedly into His hands, it will be no use thinking or talking about our lives being consecrated to Him.

The heart that is not entrusted to Him for searching, will not be undertaken by Him for cleansing; The life that fears to come to the light lest any deed should be reproved, can never know the blessedness and the privileges of walking in the light.

But what then? When He has graciously again put a new song in our mouth and we are singing,

"Ransomed, Healed, Restored, Forgiven,  
Who Like Me His Praise Should Sing"

And again with fresh earnestness we are saying ,

"Take My Life, And Let It Be  
Consecrated, Lord, To Thee!"

Are we only to look forward to the same disappointing experience over again? Are we always to stand at the threshold?

Consecration is not so much a step as a course; Not so much an act, as a position to which a course of action inseparably belongs. In so far as it is a course and a position, there must naturally be a definite entrance upon it, and a time, it may be a moment, when that entrance is made. That is when we say, "Take"; But we do not want to go on taking a first step over and over again. What we want now is to be maintained in that position and to fulfill that course.

So, let us go on to another prayer. Having already said, "Take My Life, For I Cannot Give It To Thee," let us now say with deepened conviction that without Christ we really can do nothing, "Keep My Life, For I Cannot Keep It For Thee."

Let us ask this with the same simple trust to which, in so many other things, He has so liberally and graciously responded. For this is the confidence we have in Him, that if we ask anything according to His Will, He heareth us; And if we know that He hears us, whatsoever we ask, we know that we have the petitions that we desired of Him. There can be no doubt that this petition is according to His will because it is based upon many a promise.

May I give it you just as it floats through my own mind again and again, knowing whom I have believed and being persuaded that He is able keep that which I have committed unto Him?

Keep My Life, That It May Be  
Consecrated, Lord, To Thee.

Keep My Moments And My Days;  
Let Them Flow In Ceaseless Praise.

Keep My Hands, That They May Move  
At The Impulse Of Thy Love.

Keep My Feet, That They May Be  
Swift And "Beautiful" For Thee.

Keep My Voice, That I May Sing  
Always, Only, For My King.

Keep My Lips, That They May Be  
Filled With Messages From Thee.

Keep My Silver And My Gold;  
Not A Mite Would I Withhold.

Keep My Intellect, And Use

Every Power As Thou Shalt Choose.

Keep My Will, Oh, Keep It Thine!  
For It Is No Longer Mine.

Keep My Heart; It Is Thine Own;  
It Is Now Thy Royal Throne.

Keep My Love; My Lord, I Pour  
At Thy Feet Its Treasure-Store.

Keep Myself, That I May Be  
Ever, ONLY, All For Thee.

Yes! He who is able and willing to take unto Himself, is no less able and willing to keep for Himself. Our willing offering has been made by His enabling grace and this our King has "Seen With Joy." And now we pray, "Keep This Forever In The Imagination Of The Thoughts Of The Heart Of Thy People" ( 1 Chron. XXIX. 17, 18 ).

This blessed "Taking," once for all, which we may quietly believe as a true accomplished fact, followed by the continual "Keeping," for which He will be continually inquired of by us, seems analogous to the great washing of the feet for which we need to be continually coming to Him. For with the deepest and with the sweetest consciousness that He has indeed taken our lives to be His very own. The need of His active and actual keeping of them in every detail and at every moment is most fully realized.

But, then we have the promise of our faithful GOD, "I The Lord Do Keep It, I Will Keep It Night And Day." The only question is, will we trust this promise, or will we not?

If we do, we shall find it come true. If not, of course it will not be realized. For unclaimed promises are like uncashed cheques; They will keep us from Bankruptcy, but not from want. But if not, WHY not? What right have we to pick out one of His faithful sayings and say we don't expect Him to fulfill that? What defence can we bring, what excuse can we invent for so doing?

If you appeal to experience against His Faithfulness to His word, I will appeal to experience, too and ask you, did you ever really trust Jesus to fulfill any word of His to you and find your trust deceived? As to the past experience of the details of your life not being kept for Jesus, look a little more closely at it and you will find that though you may have asked, you did not trust. Whatever you did really trust Him to keep, He has kept and the unkept things were never really entrusted. Scrutinize this past experience as you will and it will only bear witness against your unfaithfulness, never against His Absolute Faithfulness.

Yet, this witness must not be unheeded. We must not forget the things that are behind till they are confessed and forgiven. Let us now bring all this unsatisfactory past experience and most of all, the want of trust which has been the poison-spring of its course to the precious Blood of Christ, which cleanseth us, even us, from all sin, even this sin.



Perhaps, we never saw that we were not trusting Jesus as He deserves to be trusted; If so, let us wonderingly hate ourselves the more that we could be so trustless to such a Saviour and so sinfully dark and stupid that we did not even see it.

And Oh, let us wonderingly love Him the more that He has been so patient and gentle with us, upbraiding not, though in our slow-hearted foolishness we have been grieving Him by this subtle unbelief; And then, by His Grace, may we enter upon a new era of experience, our kept for Him more fully than ever before because we trust Him more simply and unreservedly to keep them!

Here we must face a question and perhaps, a difficulty. Does it not almost seem as if we were at this point led to trusting to our trust, making everything hinge upon it and thereby only removing a subtle dependence upon ourselves one step farther back, disguising instead of renouncing it? If Christ's keeping depends upon our trusting and our continuing to trust depends upon ourselves, we are in no better or safer position than before and shall only be landed in a fresh series of disappointments.

The old story, something for the sinner to do, crops up again here only with the ground shifted from "works" to trust. Said a friend to me, "I See Now! I Did Trust Jesus To Do Everything Else For Me, But I Thought That This Trusting Was Something That I Had Got To Do."

and so, of course, what she "Had Got To Do" had been a perpetual effort and frequent failure. We can no more trust and keep on trusting than we can do anything else of ourselves. Even in this it must be "Jesus Only"; We are not to look to Him for all the intermediate fulfillment of the work of faith ( Book of 2 Thessalonians 1:11 ); we must ask Him to go on fulfilling it in us, committing even this to His Power.

For We Both May And Must  
Commit Our Very Faith To Him,  
Entrust To Him Our Trust.

What a long time it takes us to come down to the conviction and still more to the realization of the fact that without Him we can do NOTHING, but that He must work ALL our works in us! This is the work of GOD, that ye believe in Him whom He has sent. And no less must it be the work of GOD that we go on believing and that we go on trusting.

Then, dear friends, who are longing to trust Him with unbroken and unwavering trust, cease the effort and drop the burden and now entrust your trust to Him! He is just as well able to keep that as any other part of the complex lives which we want Him to take and keep for Himself. And Oh, do not pass on content with the thought, "Yes, That Is A Good Idea!" But, "Now; Then DO It." It is no help to the sailor to see a flash of light across a dark sea if he does not instantly steer accordingly.

Consecration is not a religiously selfish thing. If it sinks into that, it ceases to be consecration. We want our lives kept, not that we may feel happy, and be saved the distress consequent on wandering, and get the power with GOD and man, and all the other privileges linked with it.

We shall have all this because the lower is included in the higher; But our true aim, if the Love of Christ constraineth us, will be far beyond this. Not for "Me" at all, but "For Jesus";

Not for my safety, but for His Glory; Not for my comfort, but for His Joy; Not that I may find rest, but that He may see the travail of His soul, and be satisfied! yes, for Him I want to be kept.

Kept for His sake; Kept for His use; Kept to be His witness; Kept for His Joy! Kept for Him, that in me He may show forth some tiny sparkle of His light and beauty; Kept to do His will and His work in His own way; Kept, it may be, to suffer for His sake; Kept for Him, that He may do just what seemeth Him good with me; Kept, so that no other lord shall have any more dominion over me, but that Jesus shall have all there is to have; Little enough, Indeed, but not Divided or Diminished by any other claim. Is not this, O you who love the Lord-is not this worth living for, worth asking for, worth trusting for?

This is consecration and I cannot tell you the blessedness of it. It is not the least use arguing with one who has had but a taste of its blessedness and saying to him, "How Can these these things be?" It is not the least use starting all sorts of difficulties and theoretical suppositions about it with such a one, any more than it was when the Jews argued with the man who said, "One thing I know, that whereas I was blind, now I see." The Lord Jesus does take the life that is offered to Him and He does keep the life for Himself that is entrusted to Him; But until the life is offered we cannot know the taking and until the life is entrusted we cannot know or understand the keeping. All we can do is to say, "O Taste And See!" and bear witness to the reality of Jesus Christ and set to our seal that we have found Him true to His every word and that we have proved Him able even to do exceeding abundantly above all we asked or thought. Why should we hesitate to bear this testimony? We have done nothing at all; We have in all our efforts only proved to ourselves and perhaps to others that we had no power either to give or keep our lives.

Why should we not then glorify His grace by acknowledging that we have found Him so wonderfully and tenderly gracious and faithful in both taking and keeping as we never supposed or imagined?

I shall never forget the smile and emphasis with which a poor working man bore this witness to his Lord. I said to him, "Well, H., We Have A Good Master, Have We Not?" "Ah," said he, "A Deal Better Than Ever I Thought!" That summed up his experience and so it will sum up the experience of every one who will but yield their lives wholly to the same good Master.

I cannot close this without a word with those, especially my younger friends, who, although they have named the name of Christ, are saying, "Yes, This Is All Very Well For Some People Or For Older People, But I Am Not Ready For It; I Can't Say I See My Way To This Sort Of Thing."

I am going to take the lowest ground for a minute and appeal to your "Past experience." Are you satisfied with your experience of the other "Sort Of Thing"? Your pleasant pursuits, your harmless recreations, your nice occupations, even your improving ones, what fruit are you having from them? Your social intercourse, your daily talks and walks, your investments of all the time that remains to you over and above the absolute duties GOD may have given you. What fruit that shall remain have you from all this? Day after day passes on, and year after year, and what shall the harvest be? What is even the present return?

Are you getting any real and lasting satisfaction out of it all? Are you not finding that things lose their flavour and that you are spending your strength day after day for nought? That you are no more satisfied than you were a year ago-rather less so, if anything?

Does not a sense of hollowness and weariness come over you as you go on in the same round, perpetually getting through things only to begin again? It cannot be otherwise. Over even the freshest and purest earthly fountains The Hand That Never Makes A Mistake Has Written, "He That Drinketh Of This Water Shall Thirst Again." Look into your own heart and you will find a copy of that inscription already traced, "Shall Thirst Again."

And the characters are being deepened with every attempt to quench the inevitable thirst weariness in life, which can only be satisfied and rested in full consecration to GOD.

For "Thou Hast Made Us For THYSELF, And The Heart Never Resteth Till It Findeth Rest In Thee." Today, I tell you of a brighter and happier life, whose inscription is, "Shall Never Thirst." A life that is no dull round-and-round in a circle of unsatisfactorinesses, but a life that has found its true and entirely satisfactory centre and set itself towards a shining and entirely satisfactory goal, whose brightness is cast over every step of the way. Will you not seek it?

Do not shrink, and suspect, and hang back from what it may involve with selfish and unconfiding and ungenerous half heartedness. Take the word of any who have willingly offered themselves unto the Lord, that the life of consecration is "A Deal Better Than They Thought"!

Choose this day whom you will serve with real, thoroughgoing, whole-hearted service and He will receive you; and you will find, as we have found, that He is such a good Master that you are satisfied with His goodness and that you will never want to go out free.

Nay, rather take His own word for it; See what He says: "If They Obey And Serve Him, They Shall Spend Their Days In prosperity and their years in pleasures." You cannot possibly understand that till you are really in His Service! For He does not give, nor even show His wages before you enter it. And He says, "My Servants Shall Sing For Joy Of Heart." But you cannot try over that song to see what it is like. You cannot even read one bar of it till your nominal or even promised service is exchanged for real and undivided consecration. But, when He can call you "My Servant," then you will find yourself singing for joy of heart because He says you shall.

"And Who, Then, Is Willing To Consecrate His Service This Day Unto The Lord?"

"Do Not Startle At The Term, Or Think Because You Do Not Understand All It May Include. You Are, Therefore, Not Qualified For It. I Daresay It Comprehends A Great Deal More Than Either You Or I Understand. But We Can Both Enter Into The Spirit Of It And The Detail Will Unfold Itself As Long As Our Probation Shall Last. Christ Demands A Hearty Consecration In WILL And He Will Teach Us What That Involves In Act."

This explains the paradox that "Full Consecration" may be in one sense the act of a moment and in another the work of a lifetime. It must be complete to be real and yet if real, it is always incomplete; A point of rest and yet a perpetual progression.

Suppose you make over a piece of ground to another person. You give it up, then and there, entirely to that other; It is no longer in your own possession; You no longer dig and sow, plant and reap at your own discretion or for your own profit. His occupation of it is total; No other

has any right to an inch of it; It is his affair thenceforth what crops to arrange for and how to make the most of it. But, his practical occupation of it may not appear all at once.

There may be waste land which he will take into full cultivation only by degrees, space wasted for want of draining or by over-fencing and odd corners lost for want of enclosing; Fields yielding smaller returns than they might because of hedgerows too wide and shady and trees too many and spreading and strips of good soil trampled into uselessness for want of defined pathways.

Just so is it with our lives. The transaction of, so to speak, making them over to GOD is definite and complete. But, then begins the practical development of consecration.

And here He leads on "Softly, According As The Children Be Able To Endure." I do not suppose anyone sees anything like all that it involves at the outset. We have not a notion what an amount of waste of power there has been in our lives; We never measured out the odd corners and the undrained bits and it never occurred to us what good fruit might be grown in our straggling hedgerows, nor how the shade of our trees has been keeping the sun from the scanty crops.

And so, season by season, we shall be sometimes not a little startled, yet always very glad, as we find that bit by bit the Master shows how much more may be made of our ground. How much more He is able to make of it than we did; And we shall be willing to work under Him and do exactly what He points out even if it comes to cutting down a shady tree or clearing out a ditch full of pretty weeds and wildflowers.

As the seasons pass on, it will seem as if there was always more and more to be done; The very fact that He is constantly showing us something more to be done in it, proving that it is really His ground.

Only let Him HAVE the ground, no matter how poor or overgrown the soil may be and then "He Will Make Her Wilderness Like Eden And Her Desert Like The Garden Of The Lord." Yes, even OUR "Desert"! And then we shall sing, "My Beloved Is Gone Down Into His Garden, To The Beds Of Spices, To Feed In The Gardens And To Gather Lilies."

Made For Thyself, O GOD!  
Made For Thy Love,  
Thy Service, Thy Delight;  
Made To Show Forth Thy Wisdom,  
Grace, And Might;

Made For Thy Praise  
Whom Veiled Archangels Laud:  
Oh, Strange And Glorious Thought,  
That We May Be  
A Joy To Thee!

Yet The Heart Turns Away  
From This Grand Destiny  
Of Bliss, And Deems  
'Twas Made For Its Poor Self,  
For Passing Dreams,  
Chasing Illusions Melting Day By Day,  
Till For Ourselves We Read  
On This World's Best,  
"This Is Not Rest!  
Our Moments Kept For Jesus:

The first point that naturally comes up is that which is almost synonymous with life- our time. And this brings us at once face to face with one of our past difficulties and its probable cause.

When we take a wide sweep, we are so apt to be vague. When we are aiming at generalities, we do not hit the practicalities. We forget that faithfulness to principle is only proved by faithfulness in detail.

Has not this vagueness had something to do with the constant ineffectiveness of our feeble desire that our time should be devoted to GOD?

In things spiritual, the greater does not always include the less, but, paradoxically, the less more often includes the greater. So in this case, time is entrusted to us to be traded with for our Lord. But, we cannot grasp it as a whole. We, instinctively, break it up ere we can deal with it for any purpose. So, when a New Year comes round, we commit it with special earnestness to the Lord. But, as we do so, are we not conscious of a feeling that even a year is too much for us to deal with? And does not this feeling, that we are dealing with a larger thing than we can grasp, take away from the sense of Reality?

Thus, we are brought to a more manageable measure; And as the Sunday mornings or the Monday mornings come round, we, thankfully, commit the opening week to Him and the sense of help and rest is renewed and strengthened.

But, not even the six or seven days are close enough to our hand; Even tomorrow exceeds our tiny grasp and even tomorrow's grace is therefore not given to us. So we find the need of considering our lives as a matter of day by day and that any more general commital and consecration of our time does not meet the case so truly. Here we have found much comfort and help and if results have not been entirely satisfactory, they have, at least, been more so than before we reached this point of subdivision.

But, if we have found help and blessing by going a certain distance in one direction, is it not probable we shall find more if we go farther in the same? And so, if we may commit the days to our Lord, why not the hours and why not the moments? And may we not expect a fresh and special blessing in so doing?

We do not realize the importance of moments. Only let us consider those two sayings of GOD about them, "In A Moment Shall They die," and, "We Shall All Be Changed In A Moment," and we shall think less lightly of them. Eternal issues may hang upon any one of them, but it has come and gone before we can even think about it. Nothing seems less within the possibility of our own keeping, yet nothing is more inclusive of all other keeping.

Therefore, let us ask Him to keep them for us.

Are they not the tiny joints in the harness through which the darts of temptation pierce us? Only give us time, we think, and we should not be overcome. Only give us time and we could pray and resist and the Devil would flee from us! But, he comes all in a moment; and in a moment, an unguarded, unkept one, we utter the hasty or exaggerated word, or think the un-Christ-like thought or feel the un-Christ-like impatience or resentment.

But, even if we have gone so far as to say, "Take My Moments," have we gone the step farther and really LET Him take them, really entrusted them to Him? It is no good saying "Take," when we do not let go. How can another keep that which we are keeping hold of?

So, let us with full trust in His power first commit these slippery moments to Him,-put them right into His hand, and then we may trustfully and happily say, "Lord, Keep Them For Me! Keep Everyone Of The Quick Series As It Arises. I Cannot Keep Them For Thee; Do Thou Keep Them For Thyself!"

But the sanctified and Christ-Loving heart cannot be satisfied with only negative keeping. We do not want only to be kept from displeasing Him, but to be kept always pleasing Him. Every "Kept From" should have its corresponding and still more blessed "Kept For."

We do not want our moments to be simply kept from Satan's use, but kept for His use;

We want them to be not only kept from sin, but kept for His Praise.

Do you ask, "But What Use Can He Make Of Mere Moments?" I will not stay to prove or illustrate the obvious truth that, as are the moments so will be the hours and the days which they build. You understand that well enough. I will answer your question as it stands.

Look back through the History of the Church in all ages and mark how often a great work and mighty influence grew out of a mere moment in the life of one of GOD's Servants; A mere moment, but overshadowed and filled with the fruitful power of the Spirit of GOD.

The moment may have been spent in uttering five words, but they have fed five thousand or even five hundred thousand. Or it may have been lit by the flash of a thought that had shone into hearts and homes throughout the land and kindled torches that have been borne into Earth's darkest corners.

The rapid speaker or the lonely thinker little guessed what use His Lord was making of that single moment. There was no room in it for even a thought of that. If that moment had not been, though perhaps unconsciously, "Kept For Jesus," but had been otherwise occupied, what a harvest to His Praise would have been missed! The same thing is going on every day.

It is generally a moment; Either an opening or a culminating one that really does the work. It is not so often a whole sermon as a single short sentence in it that wings GOD's arrow to a heart.

It is seldom a whole conversation that is the means of bringing about the desired result, but some sudden turn of thought or word which comes with the electric touch of GOD's Power. Sometimes, it is less than that; Only a look (and what is more momentary?) has been used by Him for the pulling down of strongholds.

Again, in our own quiet waiting upon GOD, as moment after moment glides past in the silence at His Feet. The Eye resting upon a of His Word or only looking up to Him through

the darkness, have we not found that He can so irradiate one passing moment with His light that its rays never die away, but shine on and on through days and years? Are not such moments proved to have been kept for Him? And if some, why not all?

This view of moments seems to make it clearer that it is impossible to serve two masters; for it is evident that the service of a moment cannot be divided. If it is occupied in the service of self, or any other master, it is not at the Lord's disposal; He cannot make use of what is already occupied.

Oh, how much we have missed by not placing them at His disposal! What might He not have done with the moments freighted with self or loaded with emptiness which we have carelessly let drift by! Oh, what might have been if they had all been kept for Jesus!

How He might have filled them with His light and life, enriching our own lives that have been impoverished by the waste and using them in far-spreading blessing and power!

While we have been undervaluing these fractions of eternity, what has our gracious GOD been doing in them? How strangely touching are the words, "What Is Man, That Thou Shouldest Set Thine Heart Upon Him, And That Thou Shouldest Visit Him Every Morning, And Try "HIM" Every Moment?"

Terribly solemn and awful would be the thought that He has been trying us every moment, were it not for the yearning gentleness and love of the Father revealed in that wonderful expression of wonder, "What Is Man, That Thou Shouldest Set Thine Heart Upon Him?" Think of that ceaseless setting of His heart upon us, careless and forgetful children as we have been! And then think of those other words, none the less literally true because given under a figure: "I, The Lord, Do Keep It; I Will Water It Every Moment."

We see something of GOD's infinite greatness and wisdom when we try to fix our dazzled gaze on infinite space. But when we turn to the marvels of the microscope we gain a clearer view and more definite grasp of these attributes by gazing on the perfection of His infinitesimal handiworks. Just so, while we cannot realize the infinite love which fills Eternity and the infinite vistas of the great future are "Dark With Excess Of Light" even to the strongest telescopes of faith, we see that love magnified in the microscope of the moments, brought very close to us and revealing its unspeakable perfection of detail to our wondering sight.

But, we do not see this as long as the moments are kept in our own hands. We are like little children closing our fingers over diamonds. How can they receive and reflect the rays of light, analyzing them into all the splendour of their prismatic beauty, while they are kept shut up tight in the dirty little hands?

Give them up; Let our Father hold them for us and throw His own great light upon them and then we shall see them full of fair colours of His manifold loving kindnesses; And let Him always keep them for us and then we shall always see His Light and His Love reflected in them. And then, surely, they shall be filled with praise. Not that we are to be always singing hymns and using the expressions of other people's praise any more than the Saints in Glory are always literally singing a new song.

But, praise will be the tone, the colour and the atmosphere in which they flow; none of them away from it or out of it.

Is it a little too much for them all to "Flow In Ceaseless Praise"? Well, where will you stop? What proportion of your moments do you think enough for Jesus? How many for the spirit of praise and how many for the spirit of heaviness?

Be explicit about it and come to an understanding. If He is not to have all, then how much? Calculate, Balance and Apportion. You will not be able to do this in Heaven; You know it will be all praise there. But, you are free to halve your service of praise here or to make the proportion what you will. Yet, He made you for His Glory; Yet, He chose you that you should be to the praise of His Glory; Yet, He loves you every moment, waters you every moment, watches you unslumberingly, cares for you unceasingly. YET, HE DIED FOR YOU!

Dear Friends, one can hardly write it without tears. Shall you or I remember all this love and hesitate to give all our moments up to Him? Let us entrust Him with them and ask Him to keep them all, every single one, for His own beloved self and fill them ALL with His praise and let them ALL be to His praise!

Our Hands Kept For Jesus:

When the Lord has said to us, "Is Thine Heart Right, As My Heart Is With Thy Heart?" The next word seems to be, "If It Be, Give Me Thine Hand."

What a call to confidence and love and free, loyal, happy service is this! And how different will the result of its acceptance be from the old lamentation: "We Labour And Have No Rest; We Have Given The Hand To The Egyptians And To The Assyrians."

In the service of these "Other Lords," under whatever shape they have presented themselves, we shall have known something of the meaning of having "Both The Hands Full With Travail And Vexation Of Spirit." How many a thing have we "Taken In Hand," as we say, which we expected to find an agreeable task, an interest in life, a something towards filling up that unconfessed "Aching Void" which is often most real when least acknowledged; and after awhile we have found it change under our hands into irksome travail involving perpetual vexation of spirit!

The thing may have been of the Earth and for the world and then no wonder it failed to satisfy even the instinct of work which comes natural to many of us. Or it may have been right enough in itself, something for the good of others so far as we understood their good and unselfish in all but unraveled motive, and yet we found it full of tangled vexations because the hands that held it were not simply consecrated to GOD.

Well, if so, let us bring these soiled and tangle-making hands to the Lord, "Let Us Lift Up Our Heart With Our Hands" to Him, asking Him to clear and cleanse them.

If He says, "What Is That In Thine Hand?" Let us examine honestly whether it is something which He can use for His glory or not. If not, do not let us hesitate an instant about dropping it. It may be something we do not like to part with; but the Lord is able to give thee much more than this and the first glimpse of the excellency of the knowledge of Christ Jesus your Lord enable us to count those things loss which were gain to us.

But, if it is something which He can use, He will make us do ever so much more with it than before. Moses little thought what the Lord was going to make him do with that "Rod In His Hand"! The first thing he had to do with it was to "Cast It On The Ground," and see it pass through a startling change.



After this, he was commanded to take it up again, hard and terrifying as it was to do so. But, when it became a rod in his hand, it was no longer what it was before, the simple rod of a wandering desert shepherd.

Henceforth, it was "The Rod Of GOD In His Hand" (Ex. IV. 20). wherewith he should do signs and by which GOD Himself would do "Marvelous Things" (Ps. LXXVIII.12).

If we look at any Old Testament text about consecration, we shall see that the marginal readings of the word is, "Fill The Hand" (E.G. Ex. XXVIII.41; and 1Chron. XXIX.5). Now, if our hands are full of "Other Things," they cannot be filled with "The Things That Are Jesus Christ's; There must be emptying before there can be any true filling. So, if we are sorrowfully seeing that our hands have not been kept for Jesus, let us humbly begin at the beginning and ask Him to empty them thoroughly that He may fill them completely.

For they MUST be emptied. Either, we come to our Lord willingly about it, letting Him unclasp their hold and gladly dropping the glittering weights they have been carrying or in very love, He will have to force them open and wrench from the reluctant grasp the "Earthly Things" which are so occupying them that He cannot have His rightful use of them.

There is only one other alternative, a terrible one, to be let alone till the day comes when not a gentle Master, but the relentless king of terrors shall empty the trembling hands as our feet follow him out of the busy world into the dark valley, for "It is certain we can carry nothing out." Yet, the emptying and the filling are not all that has to be considered. Before the hands of the Priests could be filled with the emblems of consecration, they had to be laid upon the emblem of Atonement (Lev. VIII.14, Etc). that came first. "Aaron And His Sons Laid Their Hands Upon The Head Of The Bullock For The Sin-offering." So, the transference of Guilt to our substitute, typified by that act, must precede the dedication of ourselves to GOD.

"My Faith Would Lay Her Hand  
On That Dear Head Of Thine,  
While Like A Penitent I Stand,  
And There Confess My Sin."

The Blood of that Holy Substitute was shed "To Make Reconciliation Upon The Altar." Without that reconciliation we cannot offer and present ourselves to GOD; But, this being made, Christ Himself presents us. And you, that were sometimes alienated and enemies in your mind by wicked works, yet now hath He reconciled in the body of His flesh through death to present you Holy and unblamable and unreprouable in His sight.

Then Moses "Brought The Ram For The Burnt Offering; And Aaron And His Sons Laid Their Hands Upon The Head Of The Ram And Moses Burnt The Whole Ram Upon The Altar; It Was A Burnt Offering For A Sweet Savour And An Offering Made By Fire Unto The Lord."

Thus, Christ's offering was indeed a whole one, body, soul and spirit; Each and all suffering even unto death. These atoning sufferings, accepted by GOD for us, are by our own free act, accepted by us as the ground of our acceptance.

Then, reconciled and accepted, we are ready for consecration; For then "He Brought The Other Ram, The Ram Of Consecration; And Aaron And His Sons Laid Their Hands Upon The Head Of The Ram." Here we see Christ, "Who Is Consecrated for Evermore." We enter by Faith into union with Him who said, "For Their Sakes I Sanctify Myself, That They Also Might Be Sanctified through The Truth."

After all this, their hands were filled with "Consecrations For A Sweet Savour," so, after laying the hand of our Faith upon Christ, suffering and dying for us, we are to lay that very same hand of Faith and in the very same way upon Him as consecrated for us, to be the source and life and power of consecration.

And then our hands shall be filled with "Consecrations," filled with Christ and filled with all that is a sweet savour to GOD in Him.

"And Who Then Is Willing To Fill His

Hand This Day Unto The Lord?" Do you want an added motive? Listen again: "Fill Your Hands Today To The Lord That He May Bestow Upon You A Blessing this Day." Not a long time hence, not even tomorrow, but "This Day."

Do you not want a blessing? Is not your answer to your Father's "What Wilt Thou?" the same as Achsah's, "Give Me A Blessing"? Here is His promise of just what you so want; Will you not gladly fulfill His condition? A blessing shall immediately follow. He does not specify what it shall be; He waits to reveal it. You will find it such a blessing as you had not supposed could be for you; a blessing that shall verily make you rich with no sorrow added, a blessing THIS day.

All that has been said of and about consecration applies to our literal members. Stay a minute and look at your hand, the hand that holds this book as you read it. See how wonderfully it is made; How perfectly fitted for what it has to do; How ingeniously connected with the brain, so as to yield that instantaneous and instinctive obedience without which its beautiful mechanism would be very little good to us! Your hand, do you say? Whether it is soft and fair with an easy life or rough and strong with a working one or white and weak with illness, it is the Lord Jesus Christ's. It is not your own at all; It belongs to Him. He made it, for without Him was not anything made that was made, not even your hand.

And He has the added right of purchase; He has bought it that it might be one of His own instruments. We know this very well, but have we realized it?

Have we really let Him have the use of these hands of ours? And have we ever simply and sincerely asked Him to keep them for His own use?

Does this mean that we are always to be doing some definitely "Religious" work, as it is called? No, but that all that we do is to be always definitely done FOR HIM. There is a great difference. If the hands are indeed moving "At The Impulse Of His Love," the simplest little duties and acts are transfigured into Holy Service to the Lord.

"A Servant With This Clause  
Makes Drudgery Divine;  
Who Sweeps A Room As For Thy Laws,  
Makes That And The Action Fine."

George Herbert.

A Christian school girl loves Jesus; She wants to please Him all day long and so she practices her scales carefully and conscientiously. It is at the impulse of His love that her fingers move so steadily through the otherwise tiresome exercises. Some day her Master will find a use for her music; But meanwhile it may be just as really done unto Him as if it were Mr. Sankey at his organ, swaying the hearts of thousands. The hand of a Christian lad traces his Latin verses, or his figures, or his copying. He is doing his best because a banner has been given him that it may be displayed, not so much by talk as by continuance in well doing. And so, for Jesus' sake his hand moves accurately and perseveringly.

A busy wife or daughter or servant has a number of little manual duties to perform. If these are done slowly and leisurely, they may be got through, but there will not be time left for some little service to the poor or some little kindness to a suffering or troubled neighbor or for a little quiet time alone with GOD and His Word.

And so the hands move quickly, impelled by the loving desire for service or communion and kept in busy motion for Jesus' sake. Or it may be that the special aim is to give no occasion of reproach to some who are watching, but so to adorn the doctrine that those may be won by the life who will not be won by the word. Then the hands will have their share to do; They will move carefully, neatly, perhaps even elegantly, making everything around as nice as possible, letting their intelligent touch be seen in the details of the home and even of the dress, doing or arranging all the little things decently and in order for Jesus' sake And so on with every duty in every position.

It may seem an odd idea, but a simple glance at one's hand with the recollection, "This hand is not mine; It has been given to Jesus and it must be kept for Jesus," may sometimes turn the scale in a doubtful matter and be a safeguard from certain temptations. With that thought fresh in your mind as you look at your hand, can you let it take up things which to say the very least are not "For Jesus". Things which evidently cannot be used, either for Him or by Him?

Cards, for instance! And can you deliberately hold in it books of a kind which you know perfectly well, by sadly repeated experience, lead you farther from instead of nearer to Him? And books which must and do fill your mind with those "Other Things" which, entering in, choke the word? Books which you would not care to read at all if your heart were burning within you at the coming of His feet to bless you? Next time any temptation of this sort approaches, just "Look At Your Hand"!

It was of a literal hand that our Lord Jesus spoke when He said, "Behold, The hand of him that betrayeth Me is with Me on the table"; And, "He That Dippeth His Hand With Me In The Dish, The Same Shall Betray Me."

A hand so near to Jesus with Him on the table, touching His own hand in the dish at that hour of sweetest and closest and most solemn intercourse and yet betraying Him! That same hand taking the Thirty Pieces of Silver! What a tremendous lesson of the need of keeping for our hands! Oh, that every hand that is with Him at His Sacramental Table and that takes the Memorial bread may be kept from any Faithless and Loveless Motion! And again, it was by

literal "Wicked Hands" that our Lord Jesus was crucified and slain. Does not the thought that Human hands have been so treacherous and cruel to our beloved Lord, make us wish the more fervently that our hands may be totally Faithful and Devoted to Him?

Danger and Temptation to let the hands move at other impulses is every bit as great to those who have nothing else to do, but to render direct service and who think they are doing nothing else.

Take one practical instance, -our letter writing. Have we not been tempted (And Fallen Before The Temptation), according to our various dispositions, to let the hand that holds the pen move at the impulse to write an unkind thought of another; or to say a clever and sarcastic thing or a slightly coloured and exaggerated thing which will make our point more telling or to let out a grumble or a suspicion or to let the pen run away with us into flippant and trifling works, unworthy of our high and Holy calling? Have we not drifted away from the golden reminder, "Should He Reason With Unprofitable Talk And With Speeches Wherewith He Can do No Good?"

Why has this been, perhaps again and again? Is it not for want of putting our hands into our dear Master's hand and asking and trusting Him to keep them? He could have kept; He WOULD have kept!

Whatever our work or our special temptations may be, the principle remains the same, only let us apply it for ourselves.

Perhaps, one hardly needs to say that the kept hands will be very gentle hands. Quick, angry motions of the heart will sometimes force themselves into expression by the hand, though the tongue may be restrained. The very way in which we close a door or lay down a book may be a victory or a defeat, a witness to Christ's keeping or a witness that we are not truly being kept. How can we expect that GOD will use this member as an instrument of righteousness unto Him if we yield it thus as an instrument of unrighteousness unto sin?

Therefore, let us see to it that it is at once yielded to Him whose right it is; And let our sorrow that it should have been for an instant desecrated to Satan's use. Lead us to entrust it henceforth to our Lord to be kept by the power of GOD through Faith "For The Master's use."

For when the gentleness of Christ dwells in us, He can use the merest touch of a finger. Have we not heard of one gentle touch on a wayward shoulder being the turning point of a life? I have known a case in which the Master made use of less than that; -only the quiver of a little finger being made the means of touching a wayward heart.

What must the touch of the Master's own hand have been! One imagines it very gentle, though so full of power. Can He not communicate both the power and the gentleness?

When He touched the hand of Peter's wife's mother, she arose and ministered unto them. Do you not think the hand which Jesus had just touched must have ministered very excellently? As we ask Him to "Touch Our Lips With Living Fire," so that they may speak effectively for Him. May we not ask Him to touch our hands that they may minister effectively and excel in all that they find to do for Him? Then our hands shall be made strong by the hands of the Mighty GOD of Jacob.

It is very pleasant to feel that if our hands are indeed our Lord's, we may ask Him to guide them and strengthen them and teach them. I do not mean figuratively, but quite literally. In

everything they do for Him (And That Should Be Everything We Ever Undertake) we want to do it well, better and better. "Seek That Ye May Excel."

We are too apt to think that He has given us certain natural gifts, but has nothing practically to do with the improvement of them and leaves us to ourselves for that. Why not ask Him to make these hands of ours more handy for His service, more skillful in what is indicated as the "Next Thyng" they are to do? The "Kept" hands need not be clumsy hands. If the Lord taught David's hands to war and his fingers to fight, will He not teach our hands and fingers, too, to do what He would have them do?

The Spirit of GOD must have taught Bezaleel's hands as well as his head. For he was filled with it not only that he might devise cunning works, but also in cutting of stones and carvings of timber. And when all the women that were wise-hearted did spin with their hands, the hands must have been made skillful as well as the hearts made wise to prepare the beautiful garments and curtains.

There is a very remarkable instance of the hand of the Lord which I suppose signifies in that case the power of His Spirit, being upon the hand of a Man.

In 1 Chron. XXVIII.19, we read: "All This, Said David, The Lord Made Me Understand In Writing By His Hand Upon Me, Even All The Works Of This Pattern."

This cannot well mean that the Lord gave David a miraculously written scroll because a few verses before, it says that he had it all by the Spirit. So, what else can it mean but that as David wrote, the hand of the Lord was upon his hand, impelling him to trace, letter by letter, the right words of description for all the details of the temple that Solomon should build with its courts and chambers, its treasuries and vessels? Have we not sometimes sat down to write feeling perplexed and ignorant and wishing someone were there to tell us what to say? At such a moment, whether it were a mere note for post, or a sheet for press, it is a great comfort to recollect this mighty laying of a Divine hand upon a human one and ask for the same help from the same Lord. It is sure to be given!

And now, dear friend, what about your own hands? Are they consecrated to the Lord who loves you? And if they are, are you trusting Him to keep them and enjoying all that is involved in that keeping? Do let this be settled with Your Master before you go on to the next. After all, this question will hinge on another, do you love Him? If you really do, there can surely be neither hesitation about yielding them to Him nor about entrusting them to Him to be kept. Does He love you? That is the truer way of putting it; For it is not our love to Christ, but the Love of Christ to us which constraineth us. And this is the impulse of the motion and the mode of the keeping. The steam engine does not move when the fire is not kindled, nor when it is gone out; No matter how complete the machinery and abundant the fuel, cold coals will neither set it going nor keep it working.

Let us ask Him so to shed abroad His love in our hearts by the Holy Ghost which is given unto us, that it may be the perpetual and only impulse of every action of our daily life.

Our Feet Kept For Jesus:

The figurative keeping of the feet of His saints with the promise that when they run, they shall not stumble is a most beautiful and helpful subject. But, it is quite distinct from the literal keeping for Jesus of our literal feet.

There is a certain homeliness about the idea which helps to make it very real. These very feet of ours are purchased for Christ's service by the precious drops which fell from His own torn and pierced feet upon the Cross.

They are to be His errand runners. How can we let the world, the flesh and the devil have the use of what has been purchased with such payment?

Shall the "World" have the use of them? Shall they carry us where the world is paramount and the Master cannot be even named because the MENTION OF HIS NAME WOULD BE SO OBVIOUSLY OUT OF PLACE?

I know the apparent difficulties of a subject which will at once occur in connection with this, but they all vanish when our bright banner is loyally unfurled with its motto, "All For Jesus!" Do you honestly want your feet to be "Kept For Jesus?" Let these simple words, "Kept For Jesus," ring out next time the dancing difficulty or any other difficulty of the same kind comes up and I know what the result will be!

Shall "The Flesh" have the use of them? Shall they carry us hither and thither merely because we like to go. Merely because it pleases ourselves to take this walk or pay this visit? And after all, what a failure it is!

If people only would believe it, self-pleasing is always a failure in the end. Our good Master gives us a reality and fullness of pleasure in pleasing Him which we never get out of pleasing ourselves.

Shall the "Devil" have the use of them? Oh no, of course not! We start back at this as a highly, unnecessary question. Yet, if Jesus has not, Satan has. For as all are serving either the Prince of life or the prince of this world, and as no man can serve two masters, it follows that if we are not serving the one, we are serving the other.

And Satan is only too glad to disguise this service under the less startling form of the world or the still less startling one of self. All that is not "Kept For Jesus," is left for self or the world and therefore for Satan.

There is no fear but that our Lord will have many uses for what is kept by Him for Himself. "How Beautiful Are The Feet Of Them That Bring Glad Tidings Of Good Things!" That is the best use of all and I expect the Angels think those feet beautiful, even if they are cased in muddy boots or goloches. Only the question once was asked, "Wherefore Wilt Thou Run, My Son, Seeing That Thou Hast No Tidings Ready?" So, if we want to have these beautiful feet, we must have the tidings ready which they are to bear.

Let us ask Him to keep our hearts so freshly full of His good news of salvation that our mouths may speak out of their abundance. "If The Clouds Be Full Of Rain, They Empty Themselves Upon The Earth." The "Two Olive Branches Empty The Golden Oil Out Of Themselves." May we be so filled with the Spirit that we may thus have much to pour out for others!

Besides the great privilege of carrying water from the wells of salvation, there are plenty of cups of cold water to be carried in all directions; Not to the poor only; Ministries of love are often as much needed by a rich friend.

But, the feet must be kept for these; they will be too tired for them if they are tired out for self-pleasing. In such services we are treading in the blessed steps of His Most Holy Life; Who "Went About Doing Good."

Then, there is literal errand-going, -just to fetch something that is needed for the household or something that a tired relative wants, whether asked or unasked. Such things should come first instead of last because these are clearly indicated as our Lord's will for us to do by the position in which He has placed us; While what seems more direct service, may be after all not so directly apportioned by Him.

"I Have To Go And Buy Some Soap," said one with a little sigh. The sigh was waste of breath, for her feet were going to do her Lord's will for that next half hour much more truly than if they had carried her to her well-worked district and left the soap to take its chance.

A member of the Young Women's Christian Association wrote a few words on this subject, which I think will be welcome to many more than she expected them to, reach:

"May It Not Be A Comfort To Those Of Us Who Feel We Have Not The Mental Or Spiritual Power That Others Have, To Notice That The Living Sacrifice Mentioned In Rom. XII.1 Is Our "Bodies"? Of Course, That Includes The Mental Power, But does It Not, Also, Include The Loving, Sympathising Glance, The Kind, Encouraging Word, The Ready Errand For Another, The Work Of Our Hands, Opportunities For All Of Which Come Oftener In The Day Than For The Mental Power We Are Often Tempted To Envy? May We Be Enabled To Offer Willingly That Which We Have."

For if there be first a willing mind, it is accepted according to that a man hath and not according to that he hath not. If our feet are to be kept at His disposal, our eyes must be ever toward the Lord for guidance.

We must look to Him for our orders where to go. Then, He will be sure to give them. "The Steps Of A Good Man Are Ordered By The Lord." Very often we find that they have been so very literally ordered for us that we are quite astonished, just as if He had not promised!

Do not smile at a very homely thought! If our feet are not our own, ought we not to take care of them for Him whose they are? Is it quite right to be reckless about "Getting Wet Feet" which might be guarded against either by forethought or afterthought when there is, at least, a risk of hindering our service thereby?

Does it please the Master when even in our zeal for His work we annoy anxious friends by carelessness in little things of this kind?

May every step of our feet be more and more like those of our beloved Master. Let us continually consider Him in this and go where He would have gone on the errands which He would have done, "Following Hard" after Him. And let us look on to the time when our feet shall stand in the gates of the Heavenly Jerusalem when Holy Feet shall tread the streets of the Holy City; No longer pacing any lonely path, for He hath said, "They Shall Walk With Me In White."

"And He Hath Said,  
How Beautiful The Feet!  
The "Feet" So Weary,

Travel-Stained, And Worn-  
The "Feet" That Humbly,  
Patiently Have Borne  
The Toilsome Way, The Pressure,  
And The Heat.

The "Feet" Not Hasting On  
With Winged Might,  
Nor Strong To Trample Down  
The Opposing Foe  
So Lowly, And So Human,  
They Must Go  
By Painful Steps To Scale  
The Mountain Height.

Not Unto All  
The Tuneful Lips Are Given,

The Ready Tongue,  
The Words So Strong And Sweet;  
Yet All May Turn,  
With Humble, Willing "Feet",  
And Bear To Darkened Souls  
The Light From Heaven.

And Fall They  
While The Goal Far Distant Lies  
With Scarce A Word  
Yet Spoken For Their Lord-  
His Sweet Approval  
He Doth Yet Accord;  
Their "Feet" Are Beauteous  
In The Master's Eyes.

With Weary Human "Feet" He,  
Day By Day,  
Once Trod This Earth To Work  
His Acts Of Love;  
And Every Step  
Is Chronicled Above  
His Servants  
To Follow In His Way.

Sarah Geraldina Stock



Our Voices Kept For Jesus:

I have wondered a little at being told by an experienced worker that in many cases the voice seems the last and hardest thing to yield entirely to the King; And that many who think and say they have consecrated all to the Lord and His service, "Revolt" when it comes to be a question of whether they shall sing "Always, Only," for their King. They do not mind singing a few general sacred songs, but they do not see their way to really singing always and only unto and for Him.

They want to bargain and balance a little. They question and argue about what proportion they may keep for self pleasing and company pleasing and how much they must "Give Up"; And who will and who won't like it; And what they "Really Must Sing," and what they "Really Must Not Sing" at certain times and places; And what "Won't Do" and what they "Can't Very Well Help" and so on. And so when the question, "How Much Owest Thou Unto My Lord?" is applied to this particularly pleasant gift, it is not met with the loyal, free-hearted, happy response, "All! Yes, ALL For Jesus!"

I know there are special temptations around this matter. Vain and selfish ones, -whispering how much better a certain song suits your and how much more likely to be admired. Faithless ones, suggesting doubts whether you can make the Holy Song "Go." Specious ones, asking whether you ought not to please your neighbours and hushing up the rest of the precept, "Let Everyone Of You Please His Neighbour For His Good To Edification." (Rom. XV.2).

Cowardly ones, -telling you that it is just a little too much to expect of you and that you are not called upon to wave your banner in people's very faces and provoke surprise and remark, as this might do. And so the banner is kept furled.

The witness for Jesus is not borne and you sing for others and not for your King.

The words had passed your lips, "Take My Voice!" And yet, you will not let Him have it; You will not let Him have that which costs you something! And yet, He lent you that pleasant voice that you might use it for Him. And yet, He, in the sureness of His perpetual presence, was beside you all the while and heard every note as you sang the songs which were, as your inmost heart knew, NOT for Him.

Where is your Faith? Where is the consecration you have talked about? The voice has not been kept for Him because it has not been truly and unreservedly given to Him. Will you not now say, "Take My Voice, For I Had Not Given It To Thee; Keep My Voice, For I Cannot Keep It For Thee?"

And He will keep it! You cannot tell, till you have tried, how surely all the temptations flee when it is no longer your battle but the Lord's; Nor how completely and curiously all the difficulties vanish when you simply and trustfully go forward in the path of full consecration in this matter.

You will find that the keeping is most wonderfully real. Do not expect to lay down rules and provide for every sort of contingency. If you could, you would miss the sweetness of the continual guidance in the "Kept" course. Have only one rule about it, -just to look up to your Master about every single song you are asked or feel inclined to sing. If you are "Willing And Obedient", you will always meet His guiding eye.

He will always keep the voice that is wholly at His disposal. Soon you will have such experience of His immediate guidance that you will be utterly satisfied with it and only sorrowfully wonder you did not sooner thus simply lean on it. I have just received a letter from one who has laid her special gift at the feet of the Giver, yielding her voice to Him with hearty desire that it might be kept for His use. She writes:

"I Had Two Lessons On Singing While In Germany From Our Master. One Was Very Sweet. A Young Girl Wrote To Me That When She Had Heard Me Sing, "O Come, Everyone That Thirsteth," She Went Away And Prayed That She Might Come And She DID Come, Too. Is Not He Good? The Other Was; I Had Been Tempted To Join The Gesang Verein In N \_; I Prayed To Be Shown Whether I Was Right In So Doing Or Not. I Did Not See My Way Clear, So I Went. The Singing Was All Secular."

"The Very First Night I Went I Caught A Bad Cold On My Chest, Which Prevented Me From Singing Again At All Till Christmas. Those Were Better Than Any Lessons From Any Singing Master!"

Does not this illustrate both the keeping FROM and the keeping FOR? In the latter case I believe she honestly wished to know her Lord's will, -whether the training and practice were needed for His better service with her music and that, therefore, she might take them for His sake or whether the concomitants and influence would be such to hinder the close communion with Him which she had found so precious, and that, therefore she was to trust Him to give her "Much More Than This."

And so, at once, He showed her that unmistakably what He would have her NOT do and gave her the sweet consciousness that He Himself was teaching her and taking her at her word.

I know what her passionate love for music is and how very real and great the compensation from Him must have been which could thus make her right down "Glad" about what would otherwise have been an immense disappointment. And then, as to the former of these two "Lessons," the song she names was one substituted when she said, "Take My Voice," for some which were far more effective for her voice. But, having freely chosen to sing what might glorify the Master rather than the singer, see how, almost immediately, He gave her a reward infinitely outweighing all the drawing room compliments or concert room applause! That one consecrated song found echoes in Heaven, bringing by its blessed result, joy to the Angels and glory to GOD.

And the memory of that song is immortal; It will live through ages to come, never lost, never dying away when the vocal triumphs of the world's greatest singers are past and forgotten forever.

Now, you who have been taking a half and half course, do you get such rewards as this? You may well envy them! But, why not take the same decided course and share the same blessed keeping and its fullness of hidden reward? If you only knew, dear hesitating friends, what strength and gladness the Master gives when we loyally "Sing Forth The Honour Of His Name," you would not forego it!

Oh, if you only knew the difficulties it saves! For when you sing "Always And Only For Your King," you will not get much entangled by the Kings's enemies. Singing an out and out sacred song often clears one's path at a stroke as to many other things.

If you only knew the rewards He gives very often, then and there; The recognition that you are one of the King's friends by some lonely and timid one; The openings which you quite naturally gain of speaking a word for Jesus to hearts which, without the song, would never have given you the chance of the word!

If you only knew the joy of believing that His sure promise, "My Word Shall Not Return Unto Me Void," will be fulfilled as you Sing that word for Him! If you only tasted the solemn happiness of knowing that you have indeed a royal audience, that the King Himself is listening as you sing! If you only knew and why should you not know? Shall not the time past of your life suffice you for the miserable, double hearted, calculating service? Let Him have the WHOLE use of your voice at any cost and see if He does not put many a totally unexpected new song into your mouth!

I am not writing all this to great and finished singers, but to everybody who can sing at all. Those who think they have only a very small talent are often most tempted not to trade with it for their Lord. Whether you have much or little natural voice, there is reason for its cultivation and room for its use.

Place it at your Lord's disposal and He will show you how to make the most of it for Him; For not seldom His multiplying power is brought to bear on a consecrated voice. A puzzled singing master, very famous in his profession, said to one who tried to sing for Jesus, "Well, You Have Not Much Voice; But, Mark My Words, You Will Always Beat Anybody With Four Times Your Voice!" He was right, though he did not in the least know why.

A great many so called "Sacred Songs" are so plaintive and pathetic that they help to give a gloomy idea of religion. Now, don't sing these; Come out boldly and sing definitely and unmistakably for your King and of your King and to your King. You will soon find and even outsiders will have to own that it is a good thing thus to show forth His Loving Kindness and His Faithfulness (see Ps. XCII.1-3).

Here I am usually met by the query, "But, What Would You Advise Me To Sing?" I can only say that I never got any practical help from asking anyone but the Master Himself and so I would advise you to do the same!

He knows exactly what will best suit your voice and enable you to sing best for Him; for He made it and gave it just the pitch and tone He pleased, so, of course, He is the best counsellor about it. Refer your question in simplest faith to Him and I am perfectly sure you will find it answered.

He will direct you and in some way or other the Lord will provide the right songs for you to sing. That is the very best advice I can possibly give you on the subject and you will prove it to be so if you will act upon it.

Only one thing I would add: I believe there is nothing like singing His own words. The preacher claims the promise, "My Word Shall Not Return Unto Me Void" and why should not the singer equally claim it? why should we use His own inspired words, with faith in their power when speaking or writing, and content ourselves with human words put into rhyme (And Sometimes Very Feeble Rhyme) for our singing?

What a vista of happy work opens out here! What is there to prevent our using this mightiest of all agencies committed to human agents, the Word, which is quick and powerful and sharper than any two-edged sword whenever we are asked to sing?

By this means, even a young girl may be privileged to make that Word sound in the ears of many who would not listen to it otherwise. By this, the incorruptible seed may be sown in otherwise unreachable ground. It is a remarkable fact that it is actually the easiest way thus to take the very highest ground.

You will find that singing Bible words does not excite the prejudice or contempt that any other words, sufficiently decided to be worth singing, are almost sure to do. For very decency's sake, a Bible song will be listened to respectfully and for very shame's sake, no adverse whisper will be ventured against the words in ordinary English Homes. The singer is placed on a vantage ground, certain that at least the words of the song will be outwardly respected and the possible ground of unfriendly criticism thus narrowed to begin with.

But, there is much more than this. One FEELS the power of His words for oneself as one sings. One loves them and rejoices in them and what can be greater help to any singer than that? And one knows they are true and that they cannot really return void and what can give greater confidence than that? GOD may bless the singing of any words, but He Must bless the singing of His own Word if that promise means what it says!

The only real difficulty in the matter is that Scripture songs, as a rule, require a little more practice than others. Then, practice them a little more! You think nothing of the trouble of learning, for instance, a sonata, which takes you many a good hour's practice before you can render it perfectly and expressively. But, you shrink from a song the accompaniment of which you can read off without any trouble at all. And you never think of such a thing as taking one tenth the pains to learn that accompaniment that you took to learn that sonata! Very likely, too, you take additional pains to learn the sonata off by heart so that you may play it more effectively.

But, you do not take pains to learn your accompaniment by heart so that you may throw all your power into the expression of the words, undistracted by reading the notes and turning over the leaves. It is for more useful to have half a dozen Scripture songs thoroughly learnt and made your own, than to have in your portfolios several dozen easy settings of sacred poetry which you get through with your eyes fixed on the notes. And everyone thus thoroughly mastered makes it easier to master others.

You will say that all this refers only to drawing room singing. So it does, primarily, but then it is the drawing room singing which has been so little for Jesus and so much for self and society and so much less has been said about it and so much less "Done". There would not be half the complaints of the difficulty of witnessing for Christ in even professedly Christian homes and circles if every converted singer were, also, a consecrated one. For nothing raises or lowers the tone of a whole evening so much as the character of the music.

There are few things which show more clearly that, as a rule, a very definite step in advance is needed beyond being a believer or even a worker for Christ. Over how many grand or cottage pianos could the Irish Society's motto, "For Jesus' Sake Only," be hung, without being either a frequent reproach or altogether inappropriate?

But, what is learnt will, naturally, be sung. And oh! How many Christian Parents give their daughters the advantage of singing lessons without troubling themselves in the least about what songs are learnt, provided they are not exceptionally foolish! Still more pressingly I would say, how many Christian principals to whom young lives are entrusted at the most important time of all for training do not give themselves the least concern about this matter!

As I write, I turn aside to refer to a list of songs learnt last term by a fresh young voice which would willingly be trained for higher work. There is just one "Sacred" song in the whole long list and even that hardly such a one as the writer of the letter above quoted would care to sing in her fervent spirited service of Christ. All the rest are harmless and pleasing, but only suggestive of the things of earth, the things of the world that is passing away; Not one that might touch a careless heart to seek first the kingdom of GOD, not one that might show forth the glory and praise of our King, not one that tells out His Grace and Love, not one that carries His comfort to His weary ones or His joy to His loving ones. She is left to find and learn such songs as best she may; Those which she will sing with all the ease and force gained by good teaching of them are no help at all, but rather hindrance in anything like wish or attempt to "Sing For Jesus."

There is not the excuse that the songs of GOD's kingdom, songs which waft His own words to the souls around, would not have answered the teacher's purpose as well. GOD has taken care of that.

He has not left Himself without witness in this direction. He has given the most perfect melodies and the richest harmonies to be linked with His own words and no singer can be trained beyond His wonderful provision in this way.

I pray that even these poor words of mine may reach the consciences of some of those who have this responsibility and lead them to be no longer unfaithful in this important matter, no longer giving this strangely divided service, training as they profess to desire, the souls for GOD and yet allowing the voices to be trained only for the world.

But, we must not run away with the idea that singing sacred songs and singing for Jesus are convertible terms. I know by sorrowful personal experience that it is very possible to sing a sacred song and not sing it for Jesus. It is easier to have one's portfolio all right than one's heart and the repertory is more easily arranged than the motives.

When we have taken our side and the difficulties of indecision are consequently swept away, we have a new set of more subtle temptations to encounter. And although the Master will keep, the servant must watch and pray; And it is through the watching and the praying that the keeping will be effectual. We have, however, rather less excuse here than even elsewhere. For we never have to sing so very suddenly that we need be taken unawares.

We have to think what to sing and perhaps find the music and the prelude has to be played and all this gives quite enough time for us to recollect whose we are and whom we serve and to arouse to the watch.

Quite enough, too, for quick, trustful prayer that our singing may be kept free from that wretched self-seeking or even self-consciousness and kept entirely for Jesus. Our best and happiest singing will flow when there is a sweet, silent undercurrent of prayerful or praiseful

communion with our Master all through the song. As for nervousness, I am quite sure this is the best antidote to that.

On the other hand, it is quite possible to sing for Jesus without singing a sacred song. Do not take an ell for the inch this seems to give and run off with the idea that it does not matter after all what you sing, so that you sing in a good frame of mind! No such thing! And the admission needs very careful guarding and must not be wrested into an excuse for looking back to the world's songs. But, cases may and do arise in which it may be right to gratify a weary father or win a wayward brother by trying to please them with music to which they will listen when they would not listen to the songs you would rather sing. There are cases in which this may be done most truly for the Lord's sake and clearly under His Guidance.

Sometimes cases arise in which we can only say, "Neither Know We What To Do, But Our Eyes Are Upon Thee." And when we honestly say that, depend upon it we shall find the promise true, "I Will Guide Thee With Mine Eye." For GOD is faithful, who will not suffer you to be tempted above that ye are able, but will with the temptation, also make a way (Gr. "The" Way) to escape, that ye may be able to bear it.

I do not know why it should be so, but it certainly is a much rarer thing to find a young gentleman singing for Jesus than a young lady, -A VERY rare thing to find one with a cultivated voice consecrating it to the Master's use. I have met some who were not ashamed to speak for Him, to whom it never seemed even to occur to sing for Him.

They would go and teach a Bible class one day and the next they would be practicing or performing just the same songs as those who care nothing for Christ and His Blood-Bought Salvation. They had left some things behind, but they had not left any of their old songs behind. They do not seem to think that being made new creatures in Christ Jesus had anything to do with this department of their lives. Nobody could gather whether they were on the Lord's side or not as they stood and sang their neutral songs. The banner that was displayed in the class room was furled in the drawing room. Now, my friends, you who have or may have far greater opportunities of displaying that banner than we womenkind, why should you be less brave and loyal than your sisters? We are weak and you are strong naturally, but recollect that want of decision always involves want of power and compromising Christians are always weak Christians.

You will never be mighty to the pulling down of strongholds while you have one foot in the enemy's camp or on the suppose neutral ground, if such can exist (Which I Doubt), between the camps. You will never be a terror to the Devil till you have enlisted every gift and faculty on the Lord's side.

Here is a thing in which you may practically carry out the splendid motto, "All For Jesus." You cannot be all for Him as long as your voice is not for Him. Which shall it be? ALL for Him or PARTLY for Him? Answer that to Him whom you call Master and Lord.

When once this drawing room question is settled, there is not much need to expatiate about other forms of singing for Jesus. As we have the opportunity we shall be willing to do good with our pleasant gift in any way or place and it is wonderful what nice opportunities He makes for us.

Whether to one little sick child or to a thousand listeners, according to the powers and openings granted, we shall take our happy position among those who minister with singing (1 Chron. VI.32). And in so far as we really do this unto the Lord, I am quite sure He gives the hundredfold now in this present time more than all the showy songs or self-gratifying performances we may have left for His sake.

As we steadily tread this part of the path of consecration, we shall find the difficulties left behind and the real pleasantness of the way reached and it will be a delight to say to oneself, "I cannot sing the old songs"; And though you have thought it quite enough to say, "With My Song Will I Please My Friends," especially if they happened to be pleased with a mildly sacred song or two, you will strike a higher and happier, a richer and purer note, and say with David, "With My Song Will I Praise HIM." David said, also, "My Lips Shall Greatly Rejoice When I Sing Unto Thee, And My Soul, Which Thou Hast Redeemed." And you will find that this comes true.

Singing For Jesus, Our Saviour And King;  
Singing For Jesus, The Lord Whom We Love,  
All Adoration We Joyously Bring,  
Longing To Praise As They Praise Him Above.

Singing For Jesus, Our Master And Friend,  
Telling His Love And His Marvelous Grace,  
Love From Eternity, Love To The End,  
Love For The Loveless, The Sinful And Base.

Singing For Jesus, And Trying To Win  
Many To Love Him And Join In The Song;  
Calling The Weary And Wandering In,  
Rolling The Chorus Of Gladness Along.

Singing For Jesus, Our Life And Our Light;  
Singing For Him As We Press To The Mark;  
Singing For Him When The Morning Is Bright;  
Singing, Still Singing For Him In The Dark.

Singing For Jesus, Our Shepherd And Guide;  
Singing For Gladness Of Heart That He Gives,  
Singing For Wonder And Praise That He Died;  
Singing For Blessing And Joy That He Lives!

Singing For Jesus, Oh, Singing With Joy;  
Thus We Will Praise Him, Tell Out His Love,  
Till He Shall Call Us To Brighter Employ,  
Singing For Jesus Forever Above.

Our Lips Kept For Jesus;

The days are past forever when we said, "Our Lips Are Our Own." Now we know that they are not our own.

And yet, how many of my readers often have the miserable consciousness that they have "Spoken Unadvisedly With Their Lips"! How many pray, "Keep The Door Of My Lips," When the very last thing they think of expecting is that they Will be Kept! They deliberately make up their minds that hasty words or foolish words or exaggerated words, according to their respective temptation, must and will slip out of that door and that it can't be helped.

The extent of the real meaning of their prayer was merely that not quite so many might slip out. As their faith went no farther, the answer went no farther and so the door was not kept.

Do let us look the matter straight in the face. Either we have committed our lips to our Lord or we have not. This question must be settled first. If not, oh, do not let another hour pass! Take them to Jesus and ask Him to take them.

But, when you HAVE committed them to Him, it comes to this, -is He able or is He not able to keep that which you have committed to Him? If He is not able, of course you may as well give up at once, for your own experience has abundantly proved that YOU are not able so there is no help for you.

But, if He is able, -nay, thank GOD there is no "IF" on this side! - say, rather, AS He is able, where was this inevitable necessity of perpetual failure? You have been fancying yourself virtually doomed and fated to it and therefore you have gone on in it while all the time His arm was not shortened that it could not save. But you have been limiting the Holy One of Israel. Honestly, now, have you trusted Him to keep your lips "This Day"?

Trust, necessarily, implies expectation that what we have entrusted will be kept. If you have not expected Him to keep, you have not trusted. You may have tried and tried very hard, but you have not TRUSTED and therefore, you have not been kept and your lips have been the snare of your soul. (Prov.XVIII.7).

Once I heard a beautiful prayer which I can never forget; It was this: "Lord, Take My Lips And Speak Through Them; Take My Mind And Think Through It; Take My Heart And Set It On Fire."

And this is the way the Master keeps the lips of His servants, by so filling their hearts with His love that the outflow cannot be unloving, By so filling their thoughts that the utterance cannot be un-Christ-like. There must be filling before there can be pouring out; And if there is filling, there MUST be pouring out, for He hath said, "Out Of The Abundance Of The Heart The Mouth Speaketh." But, I think we should look for something more direct and definite than this.

We are not all called to be the King's Ambassadors, but ALL who have heard the messages of salvation for themselves are called to be "The Lord's Messengers," and day by day as He gives us opportunity, we are to deliver "The Lord's Message Unto The People." That message, as committed to Haggai, was, "I Am With You, Saith The Lord."



Is there not work enough for any lifetime in unfolding and distributing that one message to His own people? Then, for those who are still far off, we have that equally full message from our Lord to give out, which He has condensed for us into the one word, "Come!"

It is a specially sweet part of His dealings with His messengers that He always gives us the message for ourselves first. It is what He has first told us in darkness; That is, in the secrecy of our rooms or at least of our own hearts, that He bids us speak in light. And so the more we sit at His feet and watch to see what He has to say to ourselves, the more we shall have to tell others. He does not send us out with sealed despatches which we know nothing about and with which we have no concern.

There seems a seven-fold sequence in His filling the lips of His messengers. First, they must be purified. The live coal from off the altar must be laid upon them and He must say, "Lo, This Hath Touched Thy Lips And Thine Iniquity Is Taken Away And The Sin Is Purged."

Then, He will create the fruit of them and this seems to be the great message of peace, "Peace, To Him That Is Far Off And To Him That Is Near, Saith The Lord; And I Will Heal Him." (see Isa. LVII. 19).

Then, comes the prayer, "O Lord, Open Thou My Lips," and its sure fulfillment. For then come in the promises, "Behold, I Have Put My Words In Thy Mouth," and "They Shall Withal Be Fitted In Thy Lips." Then, of course, "The Lips Of The Righteous Feed Many," for the food is the Lord's own giving. Everything leads up to praise and so we come next to, "My Mouth Shall Praise Thee With Joyful Lips, When I Remember Thee." And lest we should fancy that "When" rather implies that it is not, or cannot be, exactly "Always", we find that the mediation of Jesus throws this added light upon it, "By HIM, Therefore, Let Us Offer The Sacrifice Of Praise To GOD CONTINUALLY, That Is, The Fruit Of Our Lips, Giving Thanks To His Name."

Does it seem a coming down from the mount to glance at one of our King's commandments which is specially needful and applicable to this matter of our lips being kept for Him?

"Watch And Pray, That Ye Enter Not Into Temptation." None of His commands clash with or supersede one another. Trusting does not supersede watching; It does but complete and effectuate it.

Unwatchful trust is a delusion and untrustful watching is in vain.

Therefore, let us not either willfully or carelessly enter into temptation, whether of place or person or topic which has any tendency to endanger the keeping of our lips for Jesus. Let us pray that grace may be more and more poured into our lips as it was into His so that our speech may be ALWAYS with grace. May they be pure and sweet and lovely even as "His lips like lilies dropping sweet smelling myrrh."

We can hardly consider the keeping of our lips without recollecting that upon them, more than all else (Though Not Exclusively Of All Else), depends that greatest of our responsibilities, our influence.

We have no choice in the matter; We cannot evade or avoid it; And there is no more possibility of our limiting it or even tracing its limits than there is of setting a bound to the far-vibrating soundwaves or watching their flow through the invisible air.

Not one sentence that passes these lips of ours but must be an invisibly prolonged influence, not dying away into silence, but living away into the words and deeds of others.

The thought would not be quite so oppressive if we could know what we have done and shall be continuing to do by what we have said. But, we never can as a matter of fact. We may trace it a little way and get a glimpse of some results for good or evil; But, we never can see any more of it than we can see of a shooting star flashing through the night with a momentary revelation of one step of its strange path.

Even if the next instant plunges it into apparent annihilation as it strikes the atmosphere of the Earth, we know that it is not really so, but that its mysterious material and force must be added to the complicated materials and forces with which it has come in contact with a modifying power none the less real because it is beyond our ken. And this is not comparing a great thing with a small, but a small thing with a great.

For what is material force compared with moral force? What are gases and vapours and elements compared with souls and eternity for which they are preparing?

We all know that there is influence exerted by a person's mere presence without the utterance of a single word. We are conscious of this everyday. People seem to carry an atmosphere with them which **MUST** be breathed by those whom they approach.

Some carry an atmosphere in which all unkind thoughts shrivel up and cannot grow into expression. Others carry one in which "Thoughts Of Christ And Things Divine" never seem able to flourish. Have you not felt how a happy conversation about the things we love best is checked or even strangled by the entrance of one who is not in sympathy?

Outsiders have not a chance of ever really knowing what delightful intercourse we have one with another about these things because their very presence chills and changes it. On the other hand, how another person's incoming freshens and develops it and warms us all up and seems to give us without the least conscious effort a sort of lift!

If even unconscious and involuntary influence is such a power, how much greater must it be when the recognised power of words is added!

It has often struck me as a matter of observation that open profession adds force to this influence on whichever side it weighs and, also, that it has the effect of making many a word and act which might in other hands have been as nearly neutral as anything can be, tell with by no means neutral tendency on the wrong side. The question of Eliphaz comes with great force when applied to one who desires or professes to be consecrated altogether, life and lips: "Should He Reason With Unprofitable Talk And With Speeches Wherewith One Can Do No Good?"

There is our standard! Idle words, which might have fallen comparatively harmlessly from one who had never named the Name of Christ, may be a stumbling block to inquirers, a sanction to thoughtless juniors and a grief to thoughtful seniors, when they come from lips which are professing to feed many.

Even intelligent talk on general subjects by such a one may be a chilling disappointment to some craving heart which had indulged the hope of getting help, comfort or instruction in the things of GOD by listening to the conversation.

It may be a lost opportunity of giving and gaining no one knows **HOW** much!

How well I recollect this disappointment to myself, again and again, when a mere child! In those early seeking days I never could understand why, sometimes, a good man whom I heard preach or speak as if he loved Christ very much, talked about all sorts of other things when we came back from church or missionary meeting.

I did so wish he would have talked about the Saviour, whom I wanted, but had not found. It would have been so much more interesting even to the apparently thoughtless and merry little girl. How could he help it, I wondered, if he cared for that Pearl of Great Price as I was sure I should care for it if I could only find it! And oh, why didn't they ever talk to me about it, instead of about my lessons or their little girls at home?

They did not know their conversation was observed and compared with their sermon or speech and how a hungry little soul went empty away from the supper table. The lips of younger Christians may cause in their turn no less disappointment. One sorrowful lesson I can never forget; And I will tell the story in hope that it may save others from causes of similar regret. During a summer visit just after I had left school, a class of girls about my own age came to me a few times for an hour's singing.

It was very pleasant indeed and the girls were delighted with the hymns. They listened to all I had to say about time and expression and not with less attention to the more shyly-ventured remarks about the words.

Sometimes, I accompanied them afterwards down the avenue; And whenever I met any of them, I had smiles and plenty of kindly words for each which they seemed to appreciate immensely. A few years afterwards I sat by the bedside of one of these girls, the most gifted of them all with both heart and head. She had been led by a wonderful way and through long and deep suffering, into far clearer light than I enjoyed, and had witnessed for Christ in more ways than one and far more brightly than I had ever done. She told me how sorrowfully eagerly she was seeking Jesus at the time of those singing classes. And I never knew it because I never asked and she was too shy to speak first!

But, she told me more and every word was a pang to me, -how she used to linger in the avenue on those summer evenings, longing that I would speak to her about the Saviour; How she hoped, week after week, that I would just stretch out a hand to help her, just say one little word that might be GOD's message of peace to her, instead of the pleasant, general remarks about the nice hymns and tunes. And I never did!

And she went on for months, I think for years, after, without the light and gladness which it might have been my privilege to bring to her life. GOD chose other means for the souls that He has given to Christ cannot be lost because of the unfaithfulness of a human instrument. But she said, and the words often ring in my ears when I am tempted to let an opportunity slip, "Ah, Miss F., I Ought To Have Been YOURS!"

Yes, It is true enough that we should show forth His praise not only with our lips, but in our lives; But with very many Christians the other side of the prayer wants praying, they want rousing up even to WISH to show it forth not only in their lives but with their lips. I wonder how many, even of those who read this, really pray, "O Lord, Open Thou MY Lips And My Mouth Shall Show Forth Thy Praise."

And when opened, oh, how much one does want to have them so kept for Jesus that He may be free to make the most of them, not letting them render second-rate and indirect service when they might be doing direct and first-rate service to His Cause and Kingdom! It is terrible how much less is done for Him than might be done in consequence of the specious notion that if what we are doing or saying is not bad, we are doing good in a certain way, and therefore may be quite easy about it. We should think a man rather foolish if he went on doing work which earned five shillings a week when he might just as well do work in the same establishment and under the same master which would bring him in five pounds a week.

But, we should pronounce him shamefully dishonest and dishonourable if he accepted such handsome wages as the five pounds, and yet chose to do work worth only five shillings, excusing himself by saying that it was work all the same, and somebody had better do it. Do we not act something like this when we take the lower standard and spend our strength in just making ourselves agreeable and pleasant, creating a general good impression in favour of religion, showing that we can be all things to all men and that one who is supposed to be a citizen of the other world can be very well up in all that concerns this

world? This may be good, but is there nothing better? What does it profit if we do make this favourable impression on an outsider if we go no farther and do not use the influence gained to bring him right inside the fold, inside the only ark of safety?

People are not converted by this sort of work; At any rate, I never met or heard of anyone. "He Thinks It Better For His Quiet Influence To Tell!" said an affectionately excusing relative of one who had plenty of special opportunities of soul-winning if he had only used his lips as well as his life for his Master.

"And How Many Souls Have Been Converted To GOD By His Quiet Influence All These Years?" was my reply. And to that there was no answer!

For the silent shining was all very beautiful in theory, but not one of the many souls placed specially under his influence had been known to be brought out of darkness into marvelous light. If they had, they must have been known for such light can't help being seen.

When one has even a glimmer of the tremendous difference between having Christ and being without Christ; When one gets but one shuddering glimpse of what eternity is and of what it must mean, as well as what it may mean without Christ; When one gets but a flash of realization of the tremendous fact that all these neighbours of ours, rich and poor alike, will HAVE to spend that eternity either with Him or without Him, -It is hard, very hard indeed, to understand how "a man or woman can believe these things at all and make no effort for anything beyond the temporal elevation of those around, sometimes not even beyond their amusements!

"People must have entertainment," "they urge. I do not find that "Must" in the Bible, but I do find, "We MUST All Stand Before The Judgment-Seat Of Christ." And if you have any sort of belief in that, how can you care to use those lips of yours, which might be a fountain of life to the dying souls before you, merely to "Entertain" them at your penny reading or other entertainment?

As you sow, so you reap. The amusing paper is read or the lively ballad recited or the popular song sung and you reap your harvest of laughter or applause and of complacency at your

success in "Entertaining" the people. And there it ends when you might have sown words from which you and they should reap fruit unto life eternal. Is this worthy work for one who has been bought with such a price that he must say,

"Love So Amazing, So Divine,  
Demands My Soul, My Life, My All"?

So far from yielding "All" to that rightful demand of amazing love, he does not even yield the fruit of his lips to it, much less the lips themselves. I cannot refrain from adding that even this lower aim of "Entertaining" is by no means so appreciated as is supposed.

As a cottager of no more than average sense and intelligence remarked, "It Was All So Trifling At The Reading; I Wish Gentlefolks Would Believe That Poor People Like Something Better Than What's Just To Make Them Laugh."

After all, nothing really pays like direct, straightforward, uncompromising words about GOD and His works and Word. Nothing else ever made a man say, as a poor Irishman did when he heard the Good News for the first time, "Thank Ye, Sir; You've Taken The Hunger Off Us Today!"

Jephthah uttered all his words before the Lord; What about ours? Well, they are all uttered before the Lord in one sense, whether we will or no; For there is not a word in my tongue, but lo, Thou, O Lord, knowest it altogether! How solemn is this thought, but how sweet does it become when our words are uttered consciously before the Lord as we walk in the light of His perpetual presence!

Oh, that we may so walk, that we may so speak with kept feet and kept lips, trustfully praying, "Let The Meditation Of My Heart And The Words Of MY Mouth Be Always Acceptable In Thy Sight, O Lord, My Strength And My Redeemer!"

Bearing in mind that it is not only the words which pass their lightly-hinged portal, but our literal lips which are to be kept for Jesus. It cannot be out of place before closing this to suggest that they open both ways.

What passes in should surely be considered as well as what passes out. And very many of us are beginning to see that the command, "Whether Ye Eat Or Drink Or Whatsoever Ye Do, Do All To The Glory Of GOD," is not fully obeyed when we drink, merely because we like it, what is the very greatest obstacle to that glory in this realm of England.

What matter that we prefer taking it in a more refined form, if the thing itself is daily and actively and mightily working misery and crime and death and destruction to thousands till the cry thereof seems as if it must pierce the very Heaven!

And so it does; Sooner, a great deal, than it pierces the walls of our comfortable dining room!

I only say here, you who have said, "Take My Lips," stop and repeat that prayer next time you put that to your lips which is binding men and women hand and foot and delivering them over, helpless to Satan! Let those words pass once more from your heart OUT through your lips and

I do not think you will feel comfortable in letting the means of such infernal work pass IN through them.

Our Silver And Gold Kept For Jesus:

"The Silver And The Gold Is Mine, Saith The Lord Of Hosts." Yes, every coin we have is literally our "Lord's Money". Simple belief of this fact is the stepping-stone to full consecration of what He has given us, whether much or little.

"Then You Mean To Say We Are Never To Spend Anything On Ourselves?" Not so. Another fact must be considered. The fact that our Lord has given us our bodies as a special personal charge and that we are responsible for keeping these bodies according to the means given and the work required in working order for Him. This is part of our "Own Work". A master entrusts a workman with a delicate machine with which his appointed work is to be done. He, also, provides him with a sum of money with which he is to procure all that may be necessary for keeping the machine in thorough repair. Is it not obvious that it is the man's

Distinct duty to see to this faithfully? Would he not be failing in duty if he chose to spend it all on something for somebody else's work or on a present for his master fancying that it would please him better while the machine is creaking and wearing for want of a little oil or working badly for want of a new band or screw?

Just so, we are to spend what is really needful on ourselves because it is our charge to do so; But not for ourselves because we are not our own, but our Master's.

He, who knoweth our frame, knows its need of rest and medicine, food and clothing; And the procuring of these for our own entrusted bodies should be done just as much "For Jesus" as the greater pleasure of procuring them for someone else.

Therefore, there need be no quibbling over the assertion that consecration is not real and complete while we are looking upon a single shilling as our own to do what we like with. Also, the principle is exactly the same, whether we are spending pence or pounds; It is our Lord's money and must not be spent without reference to Him.

When we have asked Him to take and continually trust Him to keep our money, "Shopping" becomes a different thing. We look up to our Lord for guidance to lay out His money prudently and rightly and as He would have us lay it out.

The gift or garment is selected consciously under His eye and with conscious reference to Him as our own dear Master for whose sake we shall give it or in whose service we shall wear it and whose own silver or gold we shall pay for it and then it is all right.

But, have you found out that it is one of the secrets of the Lord, that when any of His dear children turn aside a little bit after having once entered the blessed path of true and conscious consecration, He is sure to send them some little punishment? He will not let us go back without a sharp, even if quite secret, reminder.

Go and spend ever such a little without reference to Him after you have once pledged the silver and gold entirely to Him and see if you are not in some way rebuked for it!

Very often by being permitted to find that you have made a mistake in your purchase or that in some way it does not prosper.

If you "Observe These Things", you will find that the more closely we are walking with our Lord, the more immediate and unmistakable will be His gracious rebukes when we swerve in any detail of the full consecration to which He has called us. And if you have already experienced and recognised this part of His personal dealing with us, you will know, also, how we love and bless Him for it.

There is always a danger that just because we say "All", we may practically fall shorter than if we had only said "Some", but said it very definitely. GOD recognises this and provides against it in many departments.

For instance, though our time is to be "All" for Him, yet He solemnly sets apart the one day in seven which is to be specially for Him. Those who think they know better than GOD and profess that everyday is a Sabbath little know what floodgates of temptation they are opening by being so very wise above what is written.

GOD knows best and that should be quite enough for every loyal heart. So, as to money, though we place it all at our Lord's disposal and rejoice to spend it all for Him directly and indirectly, yet I am quite certain it is a great help and safeguard and what is more, a matter of simple obedience to the spirit of His commands to set aside a definite and regular proportion of our income or receipts for His direct service. It is a great mistake to suppose that the law of giving the tenth to GOD is merely Levitical.

"Search And Look" for yourselves and you will find that it is, like the Sabbath, a far older rule, running all through the Bible and endorsed, not abrogated by Christ Himself:

SEE: Gen.XIV.20, XXVII.22; Lev.XXVII.30,32; Num.XVIII.21; Deut.XIV.22; 2 Chron.XXXI.

5,6,12; Neh.X.37, XII.44, XIII.12; Mal.III.8,10; Matt.XXIII.23; Luke.XI.42; 1 Cor.XVI.2; Heb.VII.8.

For, speaking of tithes, He said, "These OUGHT Ye To Have Done And Not To Leave The Other Undone." To dedicate the tenth of whatever we have is mere duty; Charity begins beyond it; Free-will offerings and thank-offerings beyond that again.

First-Fruits, also, should be thus specially set apart. This, too, we find running all through the Bible. There is a tacit appeal to our gratitude in the suggestion of them, -The very word implies bounty received and bounty in prospect. Bringing "The First Of The First-Fruits Into The House Of The Lord Thy GOD" was like "Saying Grace" for all the plenty He was going to bestow on the faithful Israelite. Something of gladness, too, seems always implied. "The Day Of The First-Fruits" was to be a day of rejoicing (compare Num.XXVIII.26 with Deut.XVI.10.11).

There is, also, an appeal to loyalty; We are commanded to HONOUR the Lord with the first-fruits of all our increase. And THAT is the way to proper, for the next word is, "So Shall Thy Barns Be Filled With Plenty."

The friend, who first called my attention to this command, said that the setting apart first-fruits -making a proportion for GOD's work a FIRST CHARGE upon the income- always

seemed to being a blessing on the rest and that since this had been systematically done, it actually seemed to go farther than when not thus lessened.

Presenting our first-fruits should be a peculiarly delightful act as they are themselves the emblem of our consecrated relationship to GOD. For of His own will begat He us by the word of truth that we should be a kind of first-fruits of His creatures.

How sweet and hallowed and richly emblematic our little acts of obedience in this matter become when we throw this light upon them! And how blessedly they may remind us of the Heavenly company, singing, as it were, a new song before the Throne; For they are the first-fruits unto GOD and the Lamb.

Perhaps, we shall find no better plan of detailed and systematic setting apart than the New Testament one: "Upon The First Day Of The Week Let Everyone Of You Lay By Him In Store, As GOD Hath Prospered Him." The very act of literally fulfilling this Apostolic command seems to bring a blessing with it, as all simple obedience does. I wish, dear friends you would try it!

You will find it a sweet reminder on His own day of this part of your consecration. You will find it an immense help in making the most of your little charities. The regular inflow will guide the outflow and ensure your always having something for any sudden call for your Master's poor or your Master's cause.

Do not say you are "Afraid You Could Not Keep To It." Some of us could tell of such sweet and singular lessons of trust in this matter, that they are written in golden letters of love on our memories.

Of course, there will be trials of our faith in this as well as in everything else. But, every trial of our faith is but a trial of His faithfulness and is "Much More Precious Than Gold Which Perisheth." "What About Self-Denial?" some reader will say. Consecration does not supersede this, but transfigures it. Literally, a consecrated life is and must be a life of denial of self. But, all the effort and pain of it is changed into very delight.

We love our Master; We know, surely and absolutely, that He is listening and watching our every word and way and that He has called us to the privilege of walking "Worthy Of The Lord Unto All Pleasing." And in so far as this is a reality to us, the identical things which are still self-denial in one sense, become actual self-delight in another.

It may be self-denial to us to turn away from something within reach of our purse which it would be very convenient or pleasant to possess. But, if the Master lifted the veil and revealed Himself standing at our side and let us hear His audible voice asking us to reserve the price of it for His treasury, should we talk about self-denial then? Should we not be utterly ashamed to think of it? Or rather, should we for one instant, think about self or self-denial at all?

Would it not be an unimaginable joy to do what He asked us to do with that money? But, as long as His own unchangeable promise stands written in His Word for us, "Lo, I Am With You Always," we may be sure that He is with us and that His eye is as certainly on our opened or half opened purse as it was on the treasury when He sat over against it and saw the two mites cast in.

So, let us do our shopping "As Seeing Him Who Is Invisible." It is important to remember that there is no much or little in GOD's sight except as relatively to our means and willingness.



"For If There Be First A Willing Mind, It Is Accepted According To That A Man Hath And Not According To That He Hath Not." He knows what we have NOT as well as what we have. He knows all about the low wages in one sphere and the small allowance or the fixed income with rising prices in another. And it is not a question of paying to GOD what can be screwed out of these, but of giving Him all and then holding all at His disposal and taking His orders about the disposal of all.

But, I do not see at all how self indulgence and needless extravagance can possibly co-exist with true consecration. If we really never do "Go Without" anything for the Lord's sake, but just because He has graciously given us means, always supply for ourselves not only every need but "Every Notion," I think it is high time we looked into the matter before GOD.

Why should only those who have limited means have the privilege of offering to their Lord that which has really cost them something to offer?

Observe, it is not "Merely" going without something we would naturally like to have or do, but going without it FOR JESUS' SAKE. Not, "I Will Go Without It Because, After All, I Can't Very Well Afford It"; Or "Because I Really Ought To Subscribe To So And So"; Or "Because I Daresay I Shall Be Glad I Have Not Spent The Money"; But, "I Will Do Without It Because I "Do" Want To Do A Little More For Him Who So Loves Me, Just That Much More That I Could Do If I Did This Other Thing."

I fancy this is more often the heart language of those who HAVE to cut and contrive, than of those who are able to give liberally without any cutting and contriving at all.

The very abundance of GOD's good gifts too often hinders from the privilege and delight of really doing without something superfluous or comfortable or usual that they may give just that much more to their Lord. What a pity!

The following quotation may (I hope it will) touch some conscience; "A Gentleman Once Told Us That His Wine Bill Was 100 pounds a year," -more than enough to keep a Scripture reader always at work in some populous district. And it is one of the countless advantages of total abstinence, that it at once sets free a certain amount of money for such work. Smoking, too, is a habit not only injurious to the health in a vast majority of cases and to our mind very unbecoming in a "Temple Of The Holy Ghost," but, also, one which squanders money which might be used for the Lord.

Expenses in dress might in most people be curtailed; Expensive tastes should be denied; And simplicity in all habits of life should be a mark of the followers of Him who had not where to lay His Head."

And again; "The Self-Indulgence Of Wealthy Christians, Who Might Largely Support The Lord's Work With What They Lavish Upon Their Houses, Their Tables Or Their Personal Expenditure, Is Very Sad To See."

(See Christian Progress. Vol III, pp.25,26.)

Here the question of jewelry seems to come in. Perhaps, it was an instance of the gradual showing of the details of consecration, but I will confess that when I wrote, "Take My Silver And My Gold," it never dawned on me that anything was included beyond the coin of the realm!

But, the Lord "Leads On Softly," and a good many of us have been shown some capital bits of unenclosed but easily enclosable ground, which have yielded "Pleasant Fruit." Yes, very pleasant fruit! It is wonderfully nice to light upon something that we really never thought of as a possible gift to our Lord and just to give it straight away to Him.

I do not press the matter, but I do ask my lady friends to give it fair and candid and prayerful consideration. Which do you really care most about, -A diamond on your finger or a star in the Redeemer's Kingdom, shining forever and ever? That is what it comes to and there I leave it.

On the other hand, it is very possible to be fairly faithful in much and yet unfaithful in that which is least. We may have thought about our gold and silver and yet have been altogether thoughtless about our rubbish! Some have a habit of hoarding away old garments, "Pieces," under the idea that they "Will Come In Useful some Day"; Very likely setting it up as a kind of mild virtue, backed by that noxious old saying, "Keep It By You Seven Years And You'll Find A Use For It."

And so the shabby things get shabbier and moth and dust doth corrupt and the drawers and places get choked and crowded and meanwhile all this that is sheer rubbish to you might be made useful at once, to a degree beyond what you would guess, to some poor person. It would be a nice variety for the clever fingers of a lady's maid to be set to work to do up old things or some tidy woman may be found in almost every locality who knows how to contrive children's things out of what seems to you only fit for the rag bag, either for her own little ones or those of her neighbours.

My sister trimmed 70 or 80 hats every spring for several years with the contents of friends' rubbish drawers, thus relieving dozens of poor mothers who liked their children to "Go Tidy On Sunday" and also keeping down finery in her Sunday school. Those who literally fulfilled her request for "Rubbish" used to marvel at the results.

Little scraps of carpet, torn old curtains, faded blinds and all such gear go a wonderfully long way towards making poor cottagers and old or sick people comfortable. I never saw anything in this "Rubbish" line yet that could not be turned to good account somehow with a little "Considering" of the poor and their discomforts.

I wish my lady reader would just leave this book now and go straight upstairs and have a good rummage at once and see what can be thus cleared out. If she does not know the right recipients at first hand, let her send it off to the nearest working clergyman's wife and see how gratefully it will be received!

For it is a great trial to workers among the poor not to be able to supply the needs they see. Such supplies are far more useful than treble their small money value.

There is no bondage in consecration. The two things are opposites and cannot co-exist, much less mingle. We should suspect our consecration and come afresh to our great Counsellor about it, directly we have any sense of bondage. As long as we have an unacknowledged feeling of fidget about our account book and a smothered wondering what and how much we "Ought" to give and a hushed-up wishing the thing had not been put quite so strongly before us, depend upon it we have not said unreservedly, "Take My Silver And My Gold." And how can the Lord keep what He has not been sincerely asked to take?

Ah! If we had stood at the foot of the Cross and watched the tremendous payment of our redemption with the precious Blood of Christ, -IF we had seen that awful price told out, drop by drop, from His own dear patient brow and torn hands and feet, till it was ALL paid and the central word of Eternity was uttered, "It Is Finished!" Should we not have been ready to say, "Not A Mite Will I Withhold!"

My Jewels.

Shall I Hold Them Back, -My Jewels?  
Time Has Traveled Many a Day  
Since I Laid Them By Forever,  
Safely Locking Them Away;  
And I Thought Them Yielded Wholly,

When I Dared No Longer Wear  
Gems Contrasting, Oh, So Sadly!  
With The Adorning I Would Bear.

Shall I Keep Them Still, -My Jewels?  
Shall I, Can I Yet Withhold  
From That Living, Loving Saviour,  
Aught Of Silver Or Of Gold?  
Gold So Needed, That His Gospel  
May Resound From Sea To Sea;  
Can I Know Christ's Service Lacketh,  
Yet Forget His "Unto Me"!

No; I Lay Them Down, -My Jewels,  
Truly On The Altar Now.  
Stay! I See A Vision Passing  
Of A Gem-Encircled Brow;  
Heavenly Treasure Worn By Jesus,  
Souls Won Through My Gift Outpoured;  
Freely, Gladly I Will Offer  
Jewels Thus To Crown My Lord!"

-From Woman's Work.

Our Intellects Kept For Jesus:

There are two very distinct sets of temptations which assail those who have, or think they have rather less and those who have, or think they rather more than an average share of intellect; While those who have neither less nor more are generally open in some degree to both. The refuge and very present help from both is the same.

The intellect, whether great or small, which is committed to the Lord's keeping, will be kept and will be used by Him.

The former class are tempted to think themselves excused from effort to cultivate and use their small intellectual gifts; To suppose they cannot or need not seek to win souls because they are not so clever and apt in speech as So-And-So; to attribute to want of gift what is really want of grace; To hide the one talent because it is not five. Let me throw out a thought or two for these.

Which is greatest, gifts or grace? Gifts are given "To Every Man According To His Several Ability." That is, we have just as much given as GOD knows we are able to use and what He knows we can best use for Him.

"But Unto Everyone Of Us Is Given "Grace" According To The Measure Of The gift of Christ."

Claiming and using that royal measure of grace, you may and can and will do more for GOD than the mightiest intellect in the world without it. For which, in the clear light of His Word, is likely to be most effectual, the natural ability which at its best and fullest, without Christ, "Can do NOTHING" (Observe And Believe That Word!) or the grace of our Almighty GOD And The Power of the Holy Ghost which is as free to you as it ever was to anyone?

If you are responsible for making use of your limited gift, are you not equally responsible for making use of the grace and power which are to be had for the asking, which are already yours in Christ and which are not limited?

Also, do you not see that where there are great natural gifts, people give the credit to them instead of to the grace which alone did the real work and thus GOD is defrauded of the Glory?

So that, to say it reverently, GOD can get more glory out of a feeble instrument because then it is more obvious that the excellency of the power is of GOD and not of us. Will you not henceforth say, "Most Gladly, Therefore, Will I Rather Glory In My Infirmities That The Power Of Christ May Rest Upon Me"?

Don't you really believe that the Holy Spirit is just as able to draw a soul to Jesus, if He will, by your whisper of the one word "Come" as by an eloquent sermon a hour long? I do! At the same time, as it is evidently GOD's way to work through these intellects of ours. We have no more right to expect Him to use a mind which we are willfully neglecting and taking no pains whatever to fit for His use than I should have to expect you to write a beautiful inscription with my pen if I would not take the trouble to wipe it and mend it.

The later class are tempted to rely on their natural gifts and to act and speak in their own strength; To go on too fast without really looking up at every step and for every word; To spend their Lord's time in polishing up their intellects, nominally for the sake of influence and power and so forth, while really, down at the bottom, it is for the sake of the keen enjoyment of the process; And perhaps, most of all, to spend the strength of these intellects "For That Which Doth Not Profit," in yielding to the specious snare of reading clever books "On Both Sides" and eating deliberately of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. The mere mention of these temptations should be sufficient appeal to conscience. If consecration is to be a reality anywhere, should it not be in the very thing which you own as an extra gift from GOD and which is evidently closest, so to speak, to His direct action, spirit upon spirit?

And if the very strength of your intellect has been your weakness, will you not entreat Him to keep it henceforth really and entirely for Himself? It is so good of Him to have given you something to lay at His feet; Shall not this goodness lead you to lay it ALL there and never hanker after taking it back for yourself of the world.?

Do you not feel that in very proportion to the gift you need the special keeping of it? He may lead you by a way you know not in the matter; Very likely He will show you that you must be willing to be a fool for His sake first before He will condescend to use you much for His Glory. Will you look up into His Face and say, "Not Willing"?

He who made every power can use every power; Memory, Judgment, Imagination, Quickness of Apprehension or Insight; Specialties of Musical, Poetical, Oratorical or Artistic faculty or special tastes for Reasoning, Philosophy, History, Natural Science or Natural History, -All these may be dedicated to Him, sanctified by Him and used by Him.

Often, in the most unexpected ways and at the most unexpected turns, something read or acquired long ago suddenly comes into use. We cannot foresee what will thus "Come In Useful"; But He knew when He guided us to learn it what it would be wanted for in His service.

So, may we not ask Him to bring His perfect foreknowledge to bear on all our mental training and storing, to guide us to read or study exactly what He knows there will be use for in the work to which He has called or will call us?

Nothing is more practically perplexing to a young Christian, whose preparation time is not quite over or perhaps painfully limited, than to know what is most worth studying, what is really the best investment of the golden hours while yet the time is not come for the field of active work to be fully entered and the "Thoroughly Furnishing" of the mind is the evident path of present duty.

Is not His name called "Counsellor"? And will He not be faithful to the promise of His Name in this as well as in all else?

The same applies to every subsequent stage. Only let us be perfectly clear about the principle that our intellect is not our own, either to cultivate or to use or to enjoy and that Jesus Christ is our real and ever present Counsellor and then there will be no more worry about what to read and how much to read and whether to keep up one's accomplishments or one's languages or one's "Ologies"! If the Master has need of them, He will show us; And if He has not, what need have we of them? If we go forward without His leading, we may throw away some talent or let it get too rusty for use which would have been most valuable when other circumstances arose or different work was given.

We must not think that "Keeping" means not using at all! What we want is to have all our powers kept for His USE.

In this they will probably find far higher development than in any other sort of use. I know cases in which the effect of real consecration on mere mental development has been obvious and surprising to all around, yet it is only a confirmation of what I believe to be a great principle, "VIZ." that the Lord makes the most of whatever is unreservedly surrendered to Him.

There will always be plenty of waste what we try to cut out for ourselves. But, He wastes no material!

Our Wills Kept For Jesus:

Perhaps, there is no point in which expectation has been so limited by experience as this. We believe GOD is able to do for us just so much as He has already done and no more. We take it for granted a line must be drawn somewhere and so we choose to draw it where experience ends and faith would have to begin.

Even if we have trusted and proved Him as to keeping our members and our minds, faith fails when we would go deeper and say, "Keep My Will!"

And yet, the only reason we have to give is, that though we have asked Him to take our will, we do not exactly find that it is altogether His, but that self-will crops up again and again. And whatever flaw there might be in this argument, we think the matter is quite settled by the fact that some whom we rightly esteem and who are far better than ourselves, have the same experience and do not even seem to think it right to hope for anything better.

That is conclusive! And the result of this, as of every other faithless conclusion, is either discouragement and depression or, still worse, acquiescence in an unyielded will as something that can't be helped .

Now, let us turn from our thoughts to GOD's thoughts. Verily, they are not as ours! He says He is able to do exceeding abundantly above all that we ask or think, Apply this here. We ask Him to take our wills and make them His. Does He or does He not mean what He says? And if He does, should we not trust Him to do this thing that we have asked and longed for and not less, but more?

"Is Anything Too Hard For The Lord?" "Hath He Said, And Shall He Not Do It?" And if He gives us faith to believe that "we have the petition that we desired of Him and with it the unspeakable rest of leaning our will wholly upon His love, what ground have we for imagining that this is necessarily to be a mere fleeting shadow, which is hardly to last a hour, but is necessarily to be exhausted ere the next breath of trial or "temptation comes? Does He mock our longing by acting as I have seen an elder person act to a child, by accepting some trifling gift of no intrinsic value, just to please the little one and then throwing it away as soon as the child's attention is diverted?

Is not the taking rather the pledge of the keeping if we will but entrust Him fearlessly with it? We give Him no opportunity, so to speak, of proving His faithfulness to this great promise because we will not fulfill the condition of reception, believing it.

But, we readily enough believe instead all that we hear of the unsatisfactory experience of others! Or, start from another word. Job said, "I Know That Thou Canst Do Everything," and we turn round and say, "Oh Yes, Everything "Except" keeping my will!" Dare we add, "And I Know That Thou Canst Not Do That"? Yet, that is what is said every day, only in other words; And GOD hears it. What does "Almighty" mean if it does not mean, as we teach our little children, "Able To Do EVERYTHING"?

We have asked this great thing many a time without, perhaps, realizing how great a petition we were singing in the old morning hymn, "Guard My First Springs Of Thought And Will!"

That goes to the root of the matter, only it implies that the will has been already surrendered to Him, that it may be wholly kept and guarded.

It may be that we have not sufficiently realized the sin of the only alternative. Our wills belong either to self or to GOD. It may seem a small and rather excusable sin in man's sight to be self willed, but see in what a category of iniquity GOD puts it! (2Pet.II.10).

And certainly we are without excuse when we have such a promise to go upon as, 'It Is GOD That Worketh In You Both To Will And To Do Of His Pleasure.' How splendidly this meets our very deepest helplessness, -Worketh in you to 'Will'!

Oh, let us pray for ourselves and for each other that we may know 'What Is The Exceeding Greatness Of His Power To Usward Who Believe.'

It does not say, 'To Usward Who Fear And Doubt'; For if we will not believe, neither shall we be established. If we will not believe what GOD says He can do, we shall see it with our eyes, but we shall not eat thereof. 'They COULD not enter in because of unbelief.'

It is most comforting to remember that the grand promise, 'Thy People Shall Be Willing In The Day Of Thy Power,' is made by the Father to Christ Himself. The Lord Jesus holds this promise and GOD will fulfill it to Him.

He will make us willing because He has promised Jesus that He will do so. And what is being made willing, but having our will taken and kept?

All true surrender of the will is based upon love and knowledge of and in confidence of the one to whom it is surrendered. We have the human analogy so often before our eyes, that it is the more strange we should be so slow to own even the possibility of it as to GOD.

Is it thought anything so very extraordinary and high-flown when a bride deliberately "Prefers" wearing a colour which was not her own taste or choice because her husband likes to see her in it. Is it very unnatural that it is no distress to her to do what he asks her to do or to go with him where he asks her to come even without question or explanation instead of doing what or going where she would undoubtedly have preferred if she did not know and love him? Is it very surprising if this lasts beyond the wedding day and if year after year she still finds it her greatest pleasure to please him, quite irrespective of what USED to be her own way and liking? Yet, in this case she is not helped by any promise or power on his part to make her wish what he wishes.

But, He who so wonderfully condescends to call Himself the Bridegroom of His Church and who claims our fullest love and trust, has promised and has power to work in us to will. Shall we not claim His promise and rely on His mighty power and say, not self-confidently, but looking only unto Jesus:

"Keep My Will, For It Is Thine;  
It Shall Be No Longer Mine!"

Only in proportion as our own will is surrendered are we able to discern the splendour of  
GOD's will.

For Oh! It Is A Splendour,  
A Glow Of Majesty,

A Mystery Of Beauty,  
If We Will Only See;  
A Very Cloud Of Glory  
Enfolding You And Me.

A Splendour That Is Lighted  
At One Transcendent Flame,  
The Wondrous Love, The Perfect Love,  
Our Father's Sweetest Name;  
For His Name And Very Essence  
And His Will Are All The Same!

Conversely, in proportion as we see this splendour of His Will, we shall more readily or more fully surrender our own.

Not until we have presented our bodies a living sacrifice can we prove what is that good and perfect and acceptable will of GOD. But, in thus proving it, this continual presentation will be more and more seen to be our reasonable service and becomes more and more a joyful sacrifice of praise.

The connection in Romans XII.1,2 between our sacrifice which He so graciously calls acceptable to Himself and our finding out that His will is acceptable to ourselves is very striking.

One reason for this connection may be that only love can really understand love and love on both sides is at the bottom of the whole transaction and its results. First, He loves us. Then, the discovery of this leads us to love Him. Then, because He loves us, He claims us and desires to have us wholly yielded to His Will so that the operation of love in and for us may find no hindrance.

Then, because we love Him, we recognize His claim and yield ourselves. Then, being thus yielded, He draws us nearer to Him (Now ye HAVE consecrated yourselves unto the Lord, come NEAR, -2 Chron. XXIX.31) and admits us, so to speak, into closer intimacy, so that we gain nearer and truer views of His perfections. Then, the unity of these perfections becomes clearer to us. Now, we not only see His justice and mercy flowing in undivided stream from the Cross of Christ, but we see that they never were divided, though the strange distortions of the dark, false glass of sin made them appear so, but that both are but emanations of GOD's Holy Love.

Then, having known and believed this Holy Love, we see further that His will is not a separate thing, but only love (And therefore all His attributes) in action; Love being the primary essence of His being and all the other attributes manifestations and combinations of that ineffable essence, for GOD is Love.



Then, this will of GOD which has seemed in old far-off days a stern and fateful power, is seen to be only love energized; Love saying, "I Will."

And when once we really grasp this (Hardly so much by faith as by love itself), the Will of GOD cannot be otherwise than acceptable for it is no longer a question of trusting that somehow or other there is a hidden element of love in it, but of understanding that it IS love; No more to be dissociated from it than the power of the sun's rays can be dissociated from their light and warmth.

And love recognized must surely be love accepted and reciprocated. So, as the fancied sternness of GOD's Will is lost in His love, the stubbornness of our will becomes melted in that love and lost in our acceptance of it.

"Take Thine Own Way With Me, Dear Lord,  
Thou Canst Not Otherwise Than Bless;  
I Launch Me Forth Upon A Sea  
Of Boundless Love And Tenderness.

I Could Not Choose A Larger Bliss  
Than To Be Wholly Thine; And Mine  
A Will Whose Highest Joy Is This,  
To Ceaselessly Unclasp In Thine.

I Will Not Fear Thee, O My GOD!  
The Days To Come Can Only Bring  
Their Perfect Sequences Of Love,

Thy Larger, Deeper comforting.

Within The Shadow Of This Love,  
Loss Doth Transmute Itself To Gain;  
Faith Veils Earth's Sorrows In Its Light,  
And Straightway Lives Above Her Pain.

We Are Not Losers Thus; We Share  
The Perfect Gladness Of The Son,  
Not Conquered -For, Behold, We Reign;  
Conquered And Conqueror Are One.

Thy Wonderful Grand Will, My GOD!  
Triumphantly I Make It Mine;  
And Faith Shall Breathe Her Glad "Amen"  
To Every Dear Command Of Thine.

Beneath The Splendour Of Thy Choice,  
Thy Perfect Choice For Me, I Rest;

Outside It Now I Dare Not Live,  
Within It I Must Needs Be Blest.

Meanwhile My Spirit Anchors Calm  
In Grander Regions Still Than This;  
The Fair, Far-Shining Latitudes  
Of That Yet Unexplored Bliss.

Then May Thy Perfect, Glorious Will  
Be Evermore Fulfilled In Me,  
And Make My Life An Answ'ring Chord  
Of Glad, Responsive Harmony.

Oh! It Is Life Indeed To Live  
Within This Kingdom Strangely Sweet;  
And Yet We Fear To Enter In,  
And Linger With Unwilling Feet.

We Fear This Wondrous Rule Of Thine,  
Because We Have Not Reached Thy Heart;  
Not Venturing Our All On Thee,  
We May Not Know How Good Thou Art.

*Jean Sophia Pigott.*

Our Hearts Kept For Jesus:

"It Is A Good Thing That The Heart Be Established With Grace," and yet some of us go on as if it were not a good thing even to hope for it to be so.

We should be ashamed to say that we had behaved treacherously to a friend; That we had played him false again and again; That we had said scores of times what we did not really mean; That we had professed and promised what, all the while we had no sort of purpose of performing. We should be ready to go off by next ship to New Zealand rather than calmly own to all this or rather than ever face our friends again after we had owned it.

And yet, we are not ashamed (some of us) to say that we are always dealing treacherously with our Lord; Nay, more, we own it with an inexplicable complacency, as if there were a kind of virtue in saying how fickle and faithless and desperately wicked our hearts are and we actually plume ourselves on the easy confession which we think proves our humility and which does not lower us in the eyes of others, nor in our own eyes, half so much as if we had to say, "I Have Told A Story," or, "I Have Broken My Promise."

Nay, more, we have not the slightest hope and therefore not the smallest intention of aiming at an utterly different state of things.

Well for us if we do not go a step farther and call those by hard and false names who do seek to have an established heart and who believe that as the Lord meant what He said when He promised, "No Good Thing Will He Withhold From Them That Walk Uprightly," so He will not withhold "This" good thing.

Prayer must be based upon promise, but thank GOD, His promises are always broader than our prayers. No fear of building inverted pyramids here, for Jesus Christ is the foundation and this and all the other "Promises Of GOD In Him Are Yea, And In Him Amen, Unto The Glory Of GOD By Us." So, it shall be unto His glory to fulfill this one to us and to answer our prayer for a "Kept" or "Established Heart". And its fulfillment shall work out His Glory, not in spite of us, but "By Us."

We find both the means and the result of the keeping in the 112th Psalm: "His Heart Is Fixed." Whose heart? An Angel? A Saint in Glory? No! Simply the heart of the man that feareth the Lord and delighteth greatly in His commandments.

Therefore, yours and mine as GOD would have them be; Just the normal idea of a God-Fearing heart, nothing extremely and hopelessly beyond attainment.

"Fixed." How does that tally with the deceitfulness and waywardness and fickleness about which we really talk as if we were rather proud of them than utterly ashamed of them?

Does our Heavenly Bridegroom expect nothing more of us? Does His mighty, all-constraining love intend to do no more for us than to leave us in this deplorable state when He is undoubtedly able to heal the desperately wicked heart (Compare verses 9 and 14 of Jeremiah XVII.) to rule the wayward one with His peace and to establish the fickle one with His grace? Are we not "Without Excuse"?

"Fixed, Trusting In The Lord." Here is the means of the fixing, -trust. He works the trust in us by sending the Holy Spirit to reveal GOD in Christ to us as absolutely, infinitely worthy of our trust.

When we "See Jesus" by Spirit-Wrought faith, we cannot but trust Him; We Distrust our hearts more truly than ever before, but we trust our Lord entirely because we trust Him ONLY. For, entrusting our trust to Him, we know that He is able to keep that which we commit (I.E. Entrust) to Him. It is His own way of winning and fixing our hearts for Himself. Is it not a beautiful one? Thus "His Heart Is Established." But, we have not quite faith enough to believe that. So what is the very first doubting and therefore sad thought that crops up? "Yes, But I Am "Afraid" It Will Not Remain Fixed."

That is "Your" thought. Now see what is GOD's thought about the case. "His Heart Is Established, He Shall Not Be Afraid."

Is not that enough? What is, if such plain and yet divine words are not? Well, the Gracious One bears with us and gives line upon line to His poor little children.

And so, He says, "The Peace Of GOD, Which Passeth All Understanding, Shall Keep Your Hearts And Minds Through Christ Jesus." And again, "Thy Thoughts Shall Be Established." And again, "Thou Wilt Keep Him In Perfect Peace, Whose Mind Is Stayed On Thee, Because He Trusteth in Thee."

And to prove to us that these promises can be realized in present experience, He sends down to us through nearly 3000 years the words of the man who prayed, "Create In Me A Clean

Heart, O GOD." and lets us hear twice over the new song put by the same Holy Spirit into His mouth: "My Heart Is Fixed, O GOD, My Heart Is Fixed." (Ps. LVIII.1).

The heart that is established in Christ is also established for Christ. It becomes His Royal Throne, no longer occupied by His foe, no longer tottering and unstable. And then we see the beauty and preciousness of the promise, "He Shall Be A Priest Upon His Throne." Not only reigning, but atoning. Not only ruling, but cleansing. Thus, the throne is established in mercy, but by righteousness.

I think we lose ground sometimes by parleying with the tempter. We have no business to parley with an usurper. The Throne is no longer his when we have surrendered it to our Lord Jesus. And why should we allow him to argue with us for one instant as if it were still an open question? Don't listen; Simply tell him that Jesus Christ is on the long disputed throne and no more about it, but turn at once to your King and claim the glorious protection of His sovereignty over you.

It is a splendid reality and you will find it so. He will not abdicate and leave you kingless and defenseless. For verily, "The Lord Is Our King; He Will Save Us." (Isa.XXXIII.22).

#### Our Hearts Are Naturally: God Can Make Them:

Evil: Clean: (Heb.III.12) (Ps.LI.10)	Impenitent: Contrite: (Rom.II.5) (Ps.LI.17)
Desperately Wicked: Good: (Jer.XVII.9) (Luke VIII.15)	Rebellious: True: (Jer.V.23) (Heb.X.22)
Weak: Fixed: (Ezek.XVI.30) (Ps.CXII.7)	Our Hearts Are Naturally: God Can Make Them:
Deceitful: Faithful: (Jer.XVII.9) (Neh.IX.8)	Hard: Soft: (Ezek.III.7) (Job.XXIII.16)
Deceived: Understanding: (Isa.XLIV.20) (1Kings III.9)	Stony: New: (Ezek.XI.19) (Ezek.XVIII.31)
Double: Honest: (Ps.XII.2) (Luke VIII.15)	Froward: Sound: (Prov.XVII.20) (Ps.CXIX.80)

Despiteful: Glad:  
(Ezek.XXV.15) (Ps.XVI.9)

Proud: Pure:  
(Prov.XXI.4) (Matt.V.8)

Stout: Established:  
(Isa.X.12) (Ps.CXII.8)

Perverse: Perfect:  
(Prov.XII.8) (1 Chron.XXIX.9)

Haughty: Tender:  
(Prov.XVIII.12) (Ephe.IV.32)

Foolish: Wise:  
(Rom.I.21) (Prov.XI.29)



ANGELS

Our Love Kept For Jesus:

Not as a mere echo from the morning gilded shore of Tiberias, but as an ever new, ever sounding note of divinest power come the familiar words to each of us, "Lovest Thou Me?"

He says it who has loved us with an everlasting Love. He says it who has died for us. He says it who has washed us from our sins in His own Blood. He says it who has waited for our love, waited patiently all through our coldness.

And if by His grace we have said, "Take My Love," which of us has not felt that part of His very answer has been to make us see how little there was to take and how little of that little has been kept for Him? And yet, we do love Him! He knows that! The very mourning and longing to love Him more proves it. But, we want more than that and so does our Lord.

He has created us to love. We have a sealed treasure of love which either remains sealed and then gradually dries up and wastes away or is unsealed and poured out and yet is the fuller and not the emptier for the outpouring.

The more love we give, the more we have to give. So far, it is only natural. But when the Holy Spirit reveals the love of Christ and sheds abroad the love of GOD in our hearts, this natural love is penetrated with a new principle as it discovers a new Object.

Everything that it beholds in that Object gives it new depth and new colours. As it sees the Holiness, the Beauty and the Glory, it takes the deep hues of conscious sinfulness, unworthiness and nothingness. As it sees even a glimpse of the love that passeth knowledge, it takes the glow of wonder and gratitude. And when it sees that love drawing close to its deepest need with Blood-Purchased pardon, it is intensified and stirred and there is no more time for weighing and measuring; We must pour it out, all there is of it with our tears at the feet that were pierced for Love of us.

And what then? Has the flow grown gradually slower and shallower? Has our Lord reason to say, "My Brethren Have Dealt Deceitfully As A Brook And As A Stream Of Brooks They Pass Away"?

It is humiliating to have found that we could not keep on loving Him as we loved in that remembered hour when "Thy Time Was The Time Of Love." We have proved that we were not able. Let this be only the stepping stone to proving that He is able!

There will have been a cause as we shall see if we seek it honestly. It was not that we really poured out all our treasure and so it naturally came to an end. We let it be secretly diverted into other channels. We began keeping back a little part of the price for something else.

We looked away from instead of looking away unto Jesus. We did not entrust Him with our love and ask Him to keep it for Himself.

And what has He to say to us? Ah, He upbraideth not. Listen! "Thus Saith The Lord, I Remember Thee, The Kindness Of Thy Youth, The Love Of Thine Espousals." Can any words be more tender, more touching to you, to me? Forgetting all the sin, all the backsliding, all the coldness, casting all that into the unreturning depths of the sea. He says He remembers that hour when we first said, "Take My Love." He remembers it now at this minute. He has written it forever on His infinite memory where the past is as the present.

His own love is unchangeable so it could never be His wish or will that we should thus drift away from Him. Oh, "Come And Let Us Return Unto The Lord!"

But, is there any hope that, thus returning, our flickering love may be kept from again failing? Hear what He says: "And I Will Betroth Thee Unto Me Forever." And again: "Thou Shalt Abide For Me Many Days; So Will I Also Be For Thee." Shall we trust His word or not? Is it worthy of our acceptation or not? Oh, rest on this word of the King and let Him from this day have the keeping of your love and He will keep it!

The Love of Christ is not an absorbing, but a radiating Love. The more we love Him, the more we shall most certainly love others. Some have not much natural power of loving, but the love of Christ will strengthen it. Some have had the springs of love dried up by some terrible earthquake .

They will find "Fresh Springs" in Jesus and the gentle flow will be purer and deeper than the old torrent could ever be. Some have been satisfied that it should rush in a narrow channel, but He will cause it to overflow into many another and widen its course of blessing. Some have spent it on all their GOD-Given dear ones. Now He is come whose right it is; And yet in

the fullest resumption of that right, He is so gracious that He puts back an even larger measure of the old love into our hand, sanctified with His own love and energized with His blessings and strengthened with His new commandment, "That Ye Love One Another, As I Have Loved You."

In that always very interesting part, called a "Corner For Difficulties" of that always very interesting magazine, "Woman's Work", the question has been discussed, "When Does Love Become Idolatry? Is It The experience Of Christians That The Coming In Of A New Object Of Affection Interferes With Entire Consecration To GOD?"

I should like to quote the many excellent answers in full, but must only refer my readers to the number for March 1879. One replies: "It Seems To Me That He Who Is Love Would Not Give Us An Object For Our Love Unless He Saw That Our Hearts Needed Expansion; And If The Love Is Consecrated And The Friendship Takes Its Stand In Christ, There Is No Need For The Fear That It Will Become Idolatry.

Let The Love On Both Sides Be Given To GOD To Keep And However Much It May Grow, The Source From Which It Springs Must Yet Be Greater." Perhaps, I may be pardoned for giving at the same writer's suggestion a quotation from "Under The Surface" on this subject. Eleanor says to Beatrice:

"I Tremble When I Think  
How Much I Love Him; But I Turn Away  
From Thinking Of It, Just To Love Him More;  
Indeed, I Fear, Too Much."

"Dear Eleanor,  
Do You Love Him As Much As Christ Loves Us?  
Let Your Lips Answer Me."

"Why Ask Me, Dear?  
Our Hearts Are Infinite, Christ Is Infinite."

"Then, Till You Reach  
The Standard Of That Love,  
Let Neither Fears Nor  
Well-Meant Warning Voice  
Distress You With " Too Much."  
For He Hath Said  
"How Much" -And Who Shall Dare  
To Change His Measure?  
"That Ye Should Love As I Have Loved You."

O sweet command, that goes so far beyond  
The Mightiest Impulse  
Of The Tenderest Heart!  
A bare permission had been much; But He  
Who knows our yearnings and our fearfulness,  
chose graciously to "Bid" us do the thing  
that makes our earthly happiness,  
a limit that we need not fear to pass,  
Because we cannot,  
Oh, The Breadth And Length,  
And Depth And Height  
Of Love That Passeth Knowledge!  
Yet Jesus said, "As I Have Loved You."  
"O Beatrice, I Long To Feel The Sunshine  
That This Should Bring;  
But There Are Other Words  
Which Fall In Chill Eclipse.  
"Tis Written, "Keep"

Yourselves From Idols." How Shall I Obey?"  
"Oh, Not By Loving Less, But Loving More.  
It is Not That We Love Our Precious Ones  
Too Much, But GOD Too Little. As The Lamp  
A Miner Bears Upon His shadowed Brow  
Is Only Dazzling In The Grimy Dark,  
And Has No Glare Against The Summer Sky,  
So, Set The Tiny Torch Of Our Best Love  
In The Great Sunshine Of The Love Of GOD,  
And, Though Full Fed And Fanned,  
It Casts No Shade  
And Dazzles Not,  
O'erflowed With Mightier Light."

There is no love so deep and wide as that which is kept for Jesus. It flows both fuller and farther when it flows only through Him. Then, too, it will be a power for Him. It will always be unconsciously working for Him.



In drawing others to ourselves by it, we shall be necessarily drawing them nearer to the fountain of our love, never drawing them away from it. It is the great magnet of His love which alone can draw any heart to Him; But when our own are thoroughly yielded to its mighty influence, they will be so magnetized that He will condescend to use them in this way. Is it not wonderful to think that the Lord Jesus will not only accept and keep, but actually USE our love?

"Of Thine Own Have We Given Thee."

For "We Love Him Because He First Loved Us."

Set Apart To Love Him,  
And His Love To Know;  
Not To Waste Affection  
On A Passing Show;  
Called To Give Him Life And Heart,  
Called To Pour The Hidden Treasure,  
That None Other Claims To Measure,  
Into His Beloved Hand!  
Thrice Blessed "Set Apart!"

Our Selves Kept For Jesus:

"For Thee!" That is the beginning and the end of the whole matter of consecration.

There was a prelude to its "Endless Song"....A Prelude Whose Theme Is Woven Into Every Following Harmony In The New Anthem Of Consecrated Life: "The Son Of GOD, Who Loved Me And Gave Himself For Me." Out of the realized "For Me", grows the practical "For Thee"! If the former is a living root, the latter will be its living fruit.

"For Thee!" This makes the difference between forced or formal and therefore, unreasonable service and the "Reasonable Service" which is the beginning of the perfect service where they see His Face. This makes the difference between slave work and free work. For Thee, my Redeemer; for Thee who hast spoken to my heart; For Thee, who hast done for me\_\_\_What? Let us each pause and fill up that blank with the great things the Lord hath done for us. For Thee, who art to me, -What? Fill that up too, before Him! For Thee, my Saviour Jesus, my Lord and my GOD!

And what is to be for Him? My self. We talk sometimes as if, whatever else could be subdued unto Him, self could never be. Did St. Paul forget to mention this important exception to the "All Things" in Phil. III.21? David said: "Bless The Lord, O My Soul, And All That Is Within me, bless His Holy Name."

Did he, too, unaccountably forget to mention that he only meant all that was within Him, "Except" self? If not, then self must be among the "All Things" which the Lord Jesus Christ is able to subdue unto Himself and which are to "Bless His Holy Name."

It is Self which, once His most treacherous foe, is now, by full and glad surrender, His own soldier coming over from the Rebel Camp into the Royal Army.

It is not someone else, some temporarily possessing spirit, which says within us, "Lord, Thou Knowest That I Love Thee," but our true and very self, only changed and renewed by the power of the Holy Ghost. And when we do that we would not, we know that "It Is No More I That Do It, But Sin That Dwelleth In Me." Our true self is the new self, taken and won by the Love of GOD and kept by the power of GOD.

Yes, "Kept"! There is the promise on which we ground our prayer; Or rather, one of the promises. For, search and look for your own strengthening and comfort and you will find it repeated in every part of the Bible, "From I Am With Thee And Will Keep Thee," in Genesis, to "I Also Will Keep Thee From The Hour OF Temptation," in Revelation.

And kept FOR HIM! Why should it be thought a thing incredible with you when it is only the fulfilling of His own eternal purpose in creating us? "This People Have I Formed FOR MYSELF." Not ultimately only, but presently and continually; For He says, "Thou Shalt Abide "For Me"; And, "He That Remaineth, Even He Shall Be For Our GOD." Are you one of His people by faith in Jesus Christ? Then see what you are to Him. You personally and individually are part of the Lord's portion (Deut. XXXII.9) and of His inheritance (1 Kings VIII.53 and Eph. 1.18). His portion and inheritance would not be complete without you; You are His peculiar treasure (Ex. XIX.5); "Special People" (How Warm And Loving And Natural That Expression Is!) "Unto Himself" (Deut. VII.6).

Would you call it keeping if you had a "Special" treasure, a darling little child, for instance, and let it run wild into all sorts of dangers all day long, sometimes at your side and sometimes out in the street with only the intention of fetching it safe home at night?

If ye then, being evil, would know better and do better than that, how much more shall our Lord's keeping be true and tender and continual and effectual when He declares us to be His peculiar treasure, purchased (See 1 Pet. II.9) for Himself at such unknown cost!

He Will Keep What Thus He Sought,  
Safely Guard The Dearly Bought;  
Cherish That Which He Did Choose,  
Always Love And Never Lose.

I know what some of us are thinking. "Yes, I See It All Plainly Enough In Theory, But In Practice I Find I Am Not Kept. Self Goes Over To The Other Camp Again And Again. It Is Not All For Jesus, Though I Have Asked And Wished For It To Be So."

Dear friends, the "All" must be sealed with "Only." Are you willing to be "Only" for Jesus? You have not given "All" to Jesus while you are not quite ready to be "Only" for Him. And it is no use to talk about "Ever" while we have not settled the "Only" and the "All." You cannot be for Him in the full and blessed sense while you are partly for anything or anyone else. For "The Lord Hath Set Apart Him That Is Godly For Himself." You see, the "For Himself"

hinges upon the "Set Apart." There is no consecration without separation. If you are mourning over want of realized consecration, will you look humbly and sincerely into this point?  
"A Garden Enclosed Is My Sister, My Spouse," Saith The Heavenly Bridegroom.

Set Apart For Jesus!  
Is Not This Enough,  
Though The Desert Prospect  
Open Wild And Rough?

Set Apart For His Delight,  
Chosen For His Holy Pleasure,  
Sealed To Be His Special Treasure!  
Could We Choose A Nobler Joy?  
-And Would We, If We Might?

But yielding, by His Grace, to this blessed setting apart for Himself, "The Lord Shall Establish Thee An Holy People Unto Himself As He Hath Sworn Unto Thee." Can there be a stronger promise? Just obey and trust His word now and yield yourselves now unto GOD, "That He May Establish Thee Today For A People Unto Himself."

Commit the keeping of your souls to Him in well-doing as unto a faithful Creator, being persuaded that He is "Able To Keep" that which you commit to Him.

Now, Lord, I Give Myself To Thee,  
I Would Be Wholly Thine,  
As Thou Hast Given Thyself To Me,  
And Thou Art Wholly Mine;  
O Take Me, Seal Me For Thine Own,  
Thine Altogether, Thine Alone.

Here comes in once more that immeasurably important subject of our influence.

For it is not what we say or do, so much as what we are, that influences others. We have heard this and very likely repeated it again and again, but have we seen it to be inevitably linked with the great question of this ? I do not know anything which, thoughtfully considered, makes us realize more vividly the need and the importance of our whole selves being kept for Jesus.

Any part not wholly committed and not wholly kept must hinder and neutralize the real influence for Him of all the rest. If we ourselves are kept all for Jesus, then our influence will be all kept for Him, too.

If not, then, however much we may wish and talk and try, we cannot throw our full weight into the right scale. And just in so far as it is not in the one scale, it must be in the other; Weighing against the little which we have tried to put in the right one and making the short weight still shorter.

So large a proportion of its entirely involuntary, while yet the responsibility of it is so enormous, that our helplessness comes out in exceptionally strong relief, while our past debt in this matter is simply incalculable. Are we feeling this a little? -Getting just a glimpse, down the misty defiles of memory of the neutral influence, the wasted influence, the mistaken influence, the actually wrong influence which has marked the ineffaceable although untraceable course?

And all the while we owed Him all that influence! It ought to have been all for Him! We have nothing to say. But, what has our Lord to say? "I Forgave Thee All That Debt!"

Then, after that forgiveness which must come first, there comes a thought of great comfort in our freshly felt helplessness, rising out of the very thing that makes us realize this helplessness.

Just because our influence is to such a great extent involuntary and unconscious, we may rest assured that if we ourselves are truly kept for Jesus, this will be, as a quite natural result, kept for Him, also. It cannot be otherwise, for as is the fountain, so will be the flow; As the spring, so the action; As the impulse, so the communicated motion.

Thus, there may be and in simple trust there will be a quite rest about it, a relief from all sense of strain and effort, a fulfilling of the words, "For He That Is Entered Into His Rest, He Also Hath Ceased From His Own Works, As GOD Did From His."

It will not be a matter of trying to have good influence, but just of having it, as naturally and constantly as the magnetized bar.

Another encouraging thought should follow. Of ourselves we may have but little weight, no particular talents or position or anything else to put into the scale; But let us remember that again and again, GOD has shown that the influence of a very average life when once really consecrated to Him, may outweigh that of almost any number of merely professing Christians. Such lives are like Gideon's three hundred, carrying not even the ordinary weapons of war, but only trumpets and lamps and empty pitchers by whom the Lord wrought great deliverance, while He did not use the others at all. For He hath chosen the weak things of the world to confound the things which are mighty.

Should not all this be additional motive for desiring that our whole selves should be taken and kept?

I know that whatsoever GOD doeth, it shall be forever. Therefore, we may rejoicingly say "Ever" as well as "Only" and "All For Thee"!

For the Lord is our Keeper and He is the Almighty and the Everlasting GOD with whom is no variableness, neither shadow of turning. He will never change His mind about keeping us and no man is able to pluck us out of His Hand.

Neither will Christ let us pluck ourselves out of His Hand, for He says, "Thou Shalt Abide For Me Many Days." And He that keepeth us will not slumber. Once having undertaken His vineyard, He will keep it night and day, till all the days and nights are over and we know the

full meaning of the salvation ready to be revealed in the last time, unto which We are kept by His Power.

And then, forever for Him! Passing from the gracious keeping by faith for this little while to the glorious keeping in His presence for all eternity! Forever fulfilling the object for which He formed us and chose us, we showing forth His praise and He showing the exceeding riches of His grace in His kindness towards us in the ages to come!

HE FOR US AND WE FOR HIM FOREVER !

Oh, how little we can grasp this! Yet, this is the fruition of being "Kept For Jesus"!

Set Apart Forever,  
For Himself alone!  
Now We See Our Calling,  
Gloriously Shown.

Owning, With No Secret Dread,  
This Our Holy Separation,  
Now The Crown Of Consecration\*  
Of The Lord, Our GOD  
Shall Rest Upon Our Willing Head.

-----  
\*Num. VI.7.

Christ For Us:

The typical promise, "Thou Shalt Abide for Me Many Days," is indeed a marvel of love. For it is given to the most undeserving, described under the strongest possible figure of utter worthlessness and treacherousness, -the woman beloved, yet an adulteress.

The depth of the Abyss shows the length of the line that has fathomed it, yet only the length of the line reveals the real depth of the Abyss.

The sin shows the love and the love reveals the sin. The Bible has few words more touching, though seldom quoted, than those just preceding this wonderful promise: "The Love Of The Lord Toward The Children Of Israel, Who Look To Other GODS And love flagons of wine."

Put that into the personal application which no doubt underlies it, and say, "The Love Of The Lord Toward "ME" Who Have Looked Away From Him, With Wandering, Faithless Eyes To Other Helps And Hopes And Have Loved Earthly Joys And Sought Earthly Gratifications, - The Love Of The Lord Toward Even Me!"

And then hear Him saying in the next verse, "So I Bought Her To Me"; Stooping to do "That" in His unspeakable condescension of love, not with the typical silver and barley, but with the

precious Blood of Christ. Then having thus loved us and rescued us and bought us with a price indeed, He says, still under the same figure, "Thou Shalt Abide For Me Many Days."

This is both a command and a pledge. But, the very pledge implies our past unfaithfulness and the proved need of even our own part being undertaken by the ever patient Lord.

He Himself has to guarantee our faithfulness because there is no hope of our continuing faithful. Well may such love win our full and glad surrender and such a promise win our happy and confident trust!

But, He says more. He says, "So Will I Also Be For Thee!" And this seems an even greater marvel of love as we observe how He meets every detail of our consecration with this wonderful word.

1. His Life "For Thee"! "The Good Shepherd Giveth His Life For The Sheep." Oh, wonderful Gift! Not Promised, But GIVEN; Not To Friends, But To Enemies. Given Without Condition, Without Reserve, Without Return. Himself Unknown And Unloved, His Gift Unsought And Unasked; He Gave His Life For Thee, A More Than Royal Bounty, The Greatest Gift That Deity Could Devise.

Oh, grandeur of love! "I Lay Down My Life For The Sheep!" And we for whom He gave it have held back and hesitated to give our lives, not even for Him (He has not asked us to do that), but to Him! But, that is past and He has tenderly pardoned the unloving, ungrateful reserve and has graciously accepted the poor little fleeting breath and speck of dust which was all we had to offer. And now His precious death and His Glorious Life are all "For Thee."

2. His Eternity "For Thee." All we can ask Him to take are days and moments, the little span given us as it is given and of this only the present in deed and the future in will. As for the past, in so far as we did not give it to Him, it is too late; We can never give it now! But, His past was given to us, though ours was not given to Him. Oh, what a tremendous debt does this show us!

Away back in the dim depths of past Eternity, "Or Ever The Earth And The World Were Made," His divine existence in the bosom of His Father was all "For Thee," purposing and planning "For Thee," receiving and holding the promise of eternal life "For Thee."

Then the thirty-three years among sinners on this sinful Earth: Do we think enough of the slowly-wearing days and nights, the heavy-footed hours, the never hastening minutes that went to make up those thirty-three years of trial and humiliation? We all know how slowly time passes when suffering and sorrow are near and there is no reason to suppose that our Master was exempted from this part of our infirmities.

Then His present is "For Thee." Even now He "Liveth To Make Intercession"; even now He "Thinketh Upon Me." Even now He "Knoweth," He "Careth," He "Loveth."

Then, only to think that His whole Eternity will be "For Thee"! Millions of ages of unfoldings of all His Love and of ever new declarings of His Father's name to His brethren. Think of it! And can we ever hesitate to give all our poor little hours to His service?

3. His Hands "For Thee." Literal hands; Literally pierced, when the whole weight of His quivering frame hung from their torn muscles and bared nerves; Literally uplifted in parting blessing. Consecrated, priestly hands; "Filled" hands (Ex. XXVIII.41, XXIX.9) filled once with His great offering and now with gifts and blessings "For Thee."

Tender hands touching and healing, lifting and leading with gentlest care. Strong hands, upholding and defending. Open hands, filling with good and satisfying desire. (Ps. CIV.28 and CXIV.16). Faithful hands, restraining and sustaining. "His left hand is under my head and His right hand both embrace me."

4. His Feet "For Thee." They were weary very often, they were wounded and bleeding once. They made clear footprints as He went about doing good and as He went up to Jerusalem to suffer; And these "Blessed Steps Of His Most Holy Life," both as substitution and example, were "For Thee." Our place of waiting and learning, of resting and loving, is at His feet. And still those "Blessed Feet" are and shall be "For Thee," until He comes again to receive us unto Himself, until and when the word is fulfilled, "They Shall Walk With Me In White."

5. His Voice "For Thee." The "Voice Of My Beloved That Knocketh, Saying, Open To Me, My Sister, My Love"; The Voice that His sheep "Hear" and "Know," and that calls out the fervent response, "Master, Say On!" This is not all.

It was the literal Voice of the Lord Jesus which uttered that one echoless cry of desolation on the Cross "For Thee," and it will be His own literal voice which will say, "Come, Ye Blessed!" To Thee.

And that same tender and "Glorious Voice" has literally sung and will sing "For Thee." I think He consecrated song for us and made it a sweet and sacred thing forever when He Himself "Sang A Hymn," the very last thing before He went forth to consecrate suffering for us.

That was not His last song. "The Lord Thy GOD, -Will Joy Over Thee With Singing." And the time is coming when He will not only sing "For Thee" or "Over Thee," but with Thee. He says He will! "In The Midst Of The Church Will I Sing Praise Unto Thee."

Now, what a magnificent glimpse of joy this is! "Jesus Himself Leading The Praises Of His Brethren" and we ourselves singing not merely in such a chorus, but with such a leader! If singing for Jesus is such a delight here, what will this singing with Jesus be? Surely song may well be a holy thing to us henceforth.

6. His Lips "For Thee." Perhaps, there is no part of our consecration which it is so difficult practically to realize and in which it is, therefore, so needful to recollect- "I Also For Thee."

It is often helpful to read straight through one or more of the Gospels with a special thought on our mind and see how much bears upon it. When we read one through with this thought, "His Lips For Me!" wondering, verse by verse, at the grace which was poured into them and the gracious words which fell from them, wondering more and more at the cumulative force and infinite wealth of tenderness and power and wisdom and love flowing from them, we cannot but desire that our lips and all the fruit of them should be wholly for Him.

"For Thee" they were opened in blessing; "For Thee" they were closed when He was led as a lamb to the slaughter. And whether teaching, warning, counsel, comfort or encouragement, commandments in whose keeping there is a great reward, or promises which exceed all we ask or think; All the precious fruit of His Lips is "For Thee," really and truly meant "For Thee."

7. His Wealth "For Thee." "Though He Was Rich, Yet For Our Sakes He Became Poor, That Ye Through His Poverty Might Be Made Rich.

Yes, "Through His Poverty" the unsearchable riches of Christ are "For Thee." Sevenfold riches are mentioned; and these are no unminted treasure or sealed reserve, but all ready coined for our use and stamped with His own image and superscription and poured freely into the hand of faith. The mere list is wonderful.

"Riches Of Goodness," "Riches Of Forbearance And Long-Suffering," "Riches Both Of Wisdom And Knowledge," "Riches Of Mercy," "Exceeding Riches Of Grace," and "Riches Of Glory." And His own Word says, "All Are Yours!"

Glance on in faith and think of eternity flowing on and on beyond the mightiest sweep of imagination and realize that all "His Riches In Glory" and "The Riches Of His Glory" are and shall be "For Thee"! In view of this, shall we care to reserve anything that rust doth corrupt for ourselves?

8. His "Treasures Of Wisdom And Knowledge" "For Thee." First, used for our behalf and benefit. Why did He expend such immeasurable might of mind upon a world which is to be burnt up, but that He would fit it perfectly to be, not the home, but the school of His children?

The infinity of His skill is such that the most powerful intellects find a lifetime too short to penetrate a little way into a few secrets of some one small department of His working.

If we turn to Providence, it is quite enough to take only one's own life and look at it microscopically and telescopically and marvel at the treasures of wisdom lavished upon its details, ordering and shaping and fitting the tiny confused bits into the true mosaic which He means it to be.

Many a little thing in our lives reveals the same Mind which, according to a well-known and very beautiful illustration, adjusted a perfect proportion in the delicate hinges of the snowdrop and the droop of its bell with the mass of the globe and the force of gravitation. How kind we think it if a very talented friend spends a little of his thought and power of mind in teaching us or planning for us! Have we been grateful for the infinite thought and wisdom which our Lord has expended upon us and our creation, preservation and redemption?

Secondly, to be shared with us. He says, "All That I Have Is Thine." He holds nothing back, reserves nothing from His dear children and what we cannot receive now He is keeping for us. He gives us "Hidden Riches Of Secret Places" now, but by and by He will give us more and the glorified intellect will be filled continually out of His treasures of wisdom and knowledge. But, the sanctified intellect will be, must be, used for Him and only for Him, now!

9. His Will "For Thee." Think first of the INFINITE MIGHT of that will; The first great law and the first great force of the universe, form which alone every other law and every other force has sprung and to which all are subordinate.

"He Worketh All Things After The Counsel Of His Own Will." "He Doeth According To His Will In The Army Of Heaven And Among The Inhabitants Of The Earth." Then think of the "Infinite Mysteries" of that will. For ages and generations the hosts of Heaven have wonderingly watched its vouchsafed unveilings and its sublime developments and still they are waiting, watching and wondering.

Creation and Providence are but the whisper of its power, but Redemption is its music and praise is the echo which shall yet fill His Temple.



The whisper and the music, yes, and "The Thunder Of His Power," are all "For Thee." For what is "The Good Pleasure Of His Will"? (Eph. I.5.) Oh, what a grand list of blessings purposed, provided, purchased and possessed, all flowing to us out of it! And nothing but blessings, nothing but privileges, which we never should have imagined and which even when revealed, we are "Slow Of Heart To Believe"; Nothing but what should even now fill us with joy unspeakable and full of Glory!"

Think of this will as always and altogether on our side, always working for us and in us and with us, if we will only let it; Think of it as always and only synonymous with infinitely wise and almighty love; Think of it as undertaking all for us from the great work of our eternal salvation down to the momentary details of guidance and supply; -And do we not feel utter shame and self-aborrence at ever having hesitated for an instant to give up our tiny, feeble, blind will to be not crushed, not even bent, but "Blent" with His Glorious and perfect Will ?

10. His Heart "For Thee." "Behold, He Is Mighty In Heart," said Job in (Job XXXVI.5). And this mighty and tender heart is "For Thee"! If He had only stretched forth His hand to save us from bare destruction and said, "My Hand For Thee!" How could we have praised Him enough?

But, what shall we say of the unspeakably marvelous condescension which says, "Thou Hast Ravished (Taken Away) My Heart, My Sister, My Spouse"! The very fountain of His divine life and light and love, the very centre of His being is given to His beloved ones, who are not only "Set As A Seal Upon His Heart," but taken into His heart so that our life is hid there and we dwell there in the very centre of all safety and power and love and glory.

What will be the revelation of "That Day" when the Lord Jesus promises, "Ye Shall Know That I Am In My Father And Ye In Me"? For He implies that we do not yet know it and that our present knowledge of this dwelling in Him is not knowledge at all compared with what He is going to show us about it.

Now, shall we, can we reserve any corner of our hearts from Him?

11. His Love "For Thee." Not a passive, possible love, but outflowing, yes, outpouring of the real, glowing, personal love of His mighty and tender heart. Love, not as an attribute, a quality, a latent force, but an acting, moving, reaching, touching and grasping power.

Love, not a cold, beautiful, far-off star, but a sunshine that comes and enfolds us, making us warm and glad and strong and bright and fruitful.

HIS love! What manner of love is it? What should be quoted to prove or describe it? First, the whole Bible with its mysteries and marvels of redemption, then the whole book of Providence and the whole volume of creation. Then, add to these the unknown records of eternity past and the unknown glories of Eternity to come and then let the immeasurable quotation be sung by "Angels And Archangels And All The Company Of Heaven," with all the harps of GOD; And still that love will be untold, still it will be "The Love Of Christ That Passeth Knowledge." But, it is "For Thee"!

12. Himself "For Thee." "Christ Also Hath Loved Us And Given Himself For Us." "The Son Of GOD, -Loved Me And Gave Himself For Me." Yes, Himself! What is the Bride's true and centre treasure? What calls forth the deepest, brightest, sweetest thrill of love and praise? Not the Bridegroom's priceless gifts, not the robe of His resplendent righteousness. Not the dowry

of unsearchable riches, not the magnificence of the palace home to which He is bringing her, not the glory which she shall share with Him, but HIMSELF!

Jesus Christ, "Who His Own Self Bare Our Sins In His Own Body On The Tree; "This Same Jesus," "Whom Having Not Seen, Ye Love"; The Son of GOD and the Man of Sorrows; My Saviour, my Friend, my Master, my King, my Priest, my Lord and my GOD, -He says, "I Also For Thee!" What An "I"!

What power and sweetness we feel in it, so different from any human "I" for all His Godhead and all His manhood are concentrated in it and all "For Thee"!

And not only "All," but "Ever" for thee. His unchangeableness is the seal upon attribute; He will be "This Same Jesus" for ever. How can mortal mind estimate this enormous promise? How can mortal heart conceive what is enfolded in these words, "I Also For Thee"? One glimpse of its fullness and glory and we feel that henceforth it must be, shall be and by His grace WILL be our true-hearted, whole-hearted cry-

Take Myself, And I Will Be  
Ever, Only, ALL for Thee!



THE HOUSE WHERE I SAW THE ANGEL.



VISITING ENGLAND AGAIN IN 1958

## 31.

### TESTIMONIES OF REJOICE.

The following s are testimonies from letters and excerpts from letters, which I have received from precious people all over the country, sharing with me their heart-felt love and praise to Jesus. These testimonies gave me a blessing and in return, I would like to share a few of them with you. I give Glory to HIM forever!

Dear Dr. Collett:

Just a word of thanks for your three days of anointed ministry in our church.

We have received many reports of souls being saved, lives changed, and many physical and emotional healings. GOD met us in a most unique and spectacular fashion.

Your testimony concerning Heaven inspired us all with a greater anticipation for the upcoming Glory The Church shall enter into. Our congregation truly experienced a touch from Heaven as we heard and saw through your words the marvelous experiences you had with Jesus. You most assuredly challenged and motivated our hearts to serve Jesus in a deeper and richer walk than even before. I personally look forward to my Heavenly home with greater anticipation than ever before.

Your Ministry blessed our church and community and for that we are deeply grateful. Many new members have joined this Assembly since your ministering. We have also experienced a greater flow of finances than in the past. We believe your coming was GOD-Ordained for this church and we are reaping the benefits.

Thank you again for being with us and we hope to have you minister to us again in the future, GOD Willing.

Sincerely Yours,

Alex Montgomery, Pastor

*FIRST ASSEMBLY OF GOD*

*Scottsbluff, Nebraska 69361*

Dear Percy,

I've had the honor of listening to your tapes about visiting with Jesus In Heaven! They have blessed my life very much. I would love to pass the blessing on to others like Jesus wants us to do!

Please send me two sets of tapes, I will be ordering more soon. The Lord has truly blessed all by the making of these tapes. Thank you.

Love in Christ Jesus,

Kathy Hoya

*Pruhoe Bay*

*Alaska*

Praise The Lord!

The people of the Islands of Hawaii, especially Oahu, are still rejoicing over the special Crusade with Dr. Percy Collett. People came from all over the Island to hear him tell about "Heaven".

There were many Budda families who came out to the meetings. Everyone is talking about this wonderful experience of Heaven.

We are all looking forward to have Brother Collett come back again next year. We highly recommend Brother Collett to anyone. He will certainly bless your Church and your entire city...

GOD bless you,

Pastor Landers

*WAHIAWA ASSEMBLY*

*Wahiawa, Hawaii 96786*

My Precious Brother:

Thank you for putting me on your mailing list. I can't tell you how much this fellowship has been lifted up by your tapes. Praise GOD Forever!!!

We've always felt part of your ministry and we deeply share the vision that El Shaddai has given you.

We are looking forward to your book and the new set of tapes. Please send them on as soon as they are finished and we will immediately send your payment.

We praise the Lord Jesus Christ for you, Percy, as you set out on your new vision - an 80 + (PLUS) teenager.

There is a Holy Ghost urgency in the air right now as He is calling us to humility and healing in these final days of preparation for Jesus' imminent return. Glory to GOD!

May the blessings and power of ALMIGHTY GOD increase for you and Sister Collett.

In Jesus' Love,

*Chuck Peters*

*GLOSSA-LAY MINISTRIES*

*321 N. 9th Street*

*Santa Paula, California 93060*

Dearly Beloved,

Praise the Name of our wonderful Jesus!

I am sending for the last two tapes of Brother Collett's newest album. These tapes on Heaven are such a blessing, I continue to wait anxiously for them.

And I continue to wait reception of the big book on Heaven. I know it will be Grand!

Love in Jesus,

*Daniel Fenn*

*Sullivan's Island*

*South Carolina*

Beloved Dr. Collett,

You have made Heaven so real. We all love you! Come and visit us at Engeltal.

*Gwen Shaw, Founder and President*

*END-TIME HANDMAIDENS*

*Engelstal*

*Jasper, Arkansas 72641*

Dear Dr. Collett:

I received the tapes. They are excellent, I listen to them every night. I hang on to every word.

Your Ministry is the best of all the ministries. I really believe in it. I believe it is going to happen just as you say, Percy, it is going to happen.

I am a widow. I want to feel God's anointing on me, spiritually and physically. Without God's power in my life, there is nothing.

I am an Italian raised Catholic. My husband was Russian Jewish and Spanish. My husband accepted Christ before he died.

Thank You Again.

*Lee Gonzalez*

*Binghampton, New York*

Dear Brother Percy,

After listening to you tell about Heaven, I am also getting ready to go Home which is Beautiful, Peaceful, Joyful, Holy, and Musical.

I love music, -I have a piano, an organ, an omnichord. I cannot play real good here, But Oh!, just wait until I get to Heaven. Glory! I tell everyone I can about Heaven and how real you made it, and how I am going there.

Brother, I just can hardly wait until I get your book. I truly love you, Brother Percy. I wish I could visit with you. Wouldn't we have a wonderful time talking about Jesus and His Heavenly Home.

Love,

*Mathilda Decker*

*Newton, Kansas*

Dear Dr Collett:

Warmest Christian Greetings from The Historic City of Chattanooga!

You will never know how much your Ministry meant, not only to my church, but also to me personally. You touched my life in such a meaningful way that I will never forget it.

I sincerely hope that we can be together again real soon.

*Cordially in Christ,*

*Ronald K. Brock*

*SPIRIT LIFE CENTRE*

*Oottawah, Tennessee 37363*

(Excerpt)

.....Please send another one of the twelve tape album to my friend-

I, also, want Dr Collett to know that his message sent me back to church (Full Gospel) where I received The Baptism of the Holy Ghost.

Praise GOD! Hallelujah!!

William Geisenheimer

*Sorrento*

*Louisiana*

Dear Dr Collett,

Thank you for the tapes. I have shared my tapes with several people so far.

I also sent for another set for my mother, who lives out of state, and she has shared hers, too.

You have a wonderful message "for everyone; I'm glad that I can be a small part of it.

GOD Bless You,  
Marcia J. Albers  
*Avon Lake, Ohio*

Dear Dr Collett:

Just a note to let you know how much we appreciated your appearance on Kaleidoscope.

We hope you were as delighted as we were with the way the segment turned out. We hope you can be our guest on the show again in the future. We will be sure to keep you in mind when the subject matter is appropriate to your interests.

Please feel free to contact us when you have an idea that you think would be interesting to our audience.

Thanks again for joining us on Kaleidoscope.

Sincerely,

Brenda Jennings  
*Wichita, Kansas 67201*

Dear Percy:

Thank you so much for coming to speak to us here in Wahiawa. It was marvelous to hear your sharing about your trip to Heaven, and all that GOD showed you. Praise GOD!

We would like to hear more. We wait for your book and for your return visit next year.

Warmly In Jesus,  
Patty Bauer  
*Wahiawa*  
*Hawaii*





IN A WONDERFUL HOLY GHOST MEETING AT RICHMOND, VIRGINIA.



PANAMA CITY, FLORIDA



CONSTRUCTION WORKERS AT JOY OF HEAVEN BIBLE INSTITUTE



JOY OF HEAVEN BIBLE INSTITUTE EARLY STAGES OF CONSTRUCTION



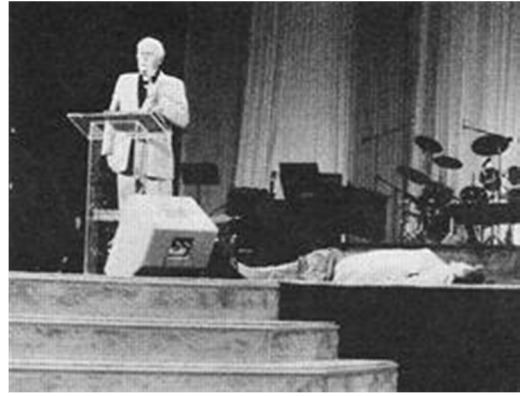
LIBERAL, KANSAS



THE MINISTRY TRAILER VAN



IN MY OFFICE - PANAMA CITY,  
FLORIDA.



ATLANTA, GEORGIA 1984.



PANAMA CITY, FLORIDA 1986.



MY BROTHER IN THE LORD, JUNG  
SHIN.



IN SUNNYVALE, CALIFORNIA  
WHILE  
A GUEST OF PASTOR DICK BERNELL



MADISON SQUARE GARDEN.



MADISON SQUARE GARDEN.



PRAYING FOR JOHN OSTEEEN  
AND HIS TWO FRIENDS.



PREACHING IN KENNETH  
COPELAND'S MEETING  
TO A MASSIVE CROWD.



HONOLULU, HAWAII MEETING.



GLORIA, DR. COLLETT, KENNETH  
COPELAND.

*BACK COVER*

I saw the Throne of God, the Crystal Sea, the City Four-square, the Banqueting House and the River of Life.

": "

I saw the Apostle Paul, Abraham and Sarah, Moses. . . Smith-Wigglesworth, Aimee McPherson, Charles Price and my first pastor, Charles O. Benham, Bishop Mason and many evangelists, great soul winners in their own mansions, the souls of those who were in Heaven and said that they were waiting for the Rapture for their bodies to come and join them. Loved One, I saw the Windows of Heaven, Eternity and millions of Angels, Jesus on His beautiful horse training His army to conquer the dragon and put him in the bottomless pit.

I saw the seven levels of Heaven, the Four and Twenty Elders, the Four Beasts throwing their crowns down before God the Father. I saw the Rainbow around the Throne of God and many other realities not mentioned in the first volume. But, they will be in the second volume. I love you...Dr. Percy Collett.